Technical and Bibliographic Notes / Notes techniques et bibliographiques

The Institute has attempted to obtain the best original copy available for filming. Features of this copy which may be bibliographically unique, which may alter any of the images in the reproduction, or which may significantly change the usual method of filming, are checked below.

L'Institut a microfilmé le meilleur exemplaire qu'il lui a été possible de se procurer. Les détails de cet exemplaire qui sont peut-être uniques du point de vue bibliographique, qui peuvent modifier une image reproduite, ou qui peuvent exiger une modification dans la méthode normale de filmage sont indiqués ci-dessous.

- [ ] Coloured covers/ Couverture de couleur
- [ ] Covers damaged/ Couverture endommagée
- [ ] Covers restored and/or laminated/ Couverture restaurée et/ou pelliculée
- [ ] Cover title missing/ Le titre de couverture manque
- [ ] Coloured maps/ Cartes géographiques en couleur
- [x] Coloured ink (i.e. other than blue or black)/ Encre de couleur (i.e. autre que bleue ou noire)
- [ ] Coloured plates and/or illustrations/ Planches et/ou illustrations en couleur
- [ ] Bound with other material/ Relié avec d'autres documents
- [ ] Tight binding may cause shadows or distortion along interior margin/ La reliure serrée peut causer de l'ombre ou de la distorsion le long de la marge intérieure
- [ ] Blank leaves added during restoration may appear within the text. Whenever possible, these have been omitted from filming/ Il se peut que certaines pages blanches ajoutées lors d'une restauration apparaissent dans le texte, mais, lorsque cela était possible, ces pages n'ont pas été filmées.

- [ ] Coloured pages/ Pages de couleur
- [ ] Pages damaged/ Pages endommagées
- [ ] Pages restored and/or laminated/ Pages restaurées et/ou pelliculées
- [x] Pages discoloured, stained or foxed/ Pages décolorées, tachetées ou piquées
- [ ] Pages detached/ Pages détachées
- [x] Showthrough/ Transparence
- [x] Quality of print varies/ Qualité inégale de l'impression
- [ ] Continuous pagination/ Pagination continue
- [ ] Includes index(es)/ Comprend un (des) index

  Title on header taken from:/ Le titre de l'en-tête provient:

- [ ] Title page of issue/ Page de titre de la livraison
- [ ] Caption of issue/ Titre de départ de la livraison
- [ ] Masthead/ Générique (périodiques) de la livraison

- [x] Additional comments:/ Commentaires supplémentaires: Various pagings. Page 189 is incorrectly numbered page 1.

This item is filmed at the reduction ratio checked below/
Ce document est filmé au taux de réduction indiqué ci-dessous.

10X	12X	14X	16X	18X	20X	22X	24X	26X	28X	30X	32X
						✓					

Hawley Harvey Crippen

NOTABLE TRIALS SERIES.

H. H. Crippen. Edited by Filson Young.

Madeleine Smith. Edited by A. Duncan Smith Advocate.

Dr. Pritchard. Edited by William Roughead.

The Stauntons. Edited by J. B. Atlay, Barrister-at-Law.

Franz Muller. Edited by H. B. Irving.

The Annesley Case Edited by Andrew Lang.

Lord Lovat. Edited by David N. Mackay.

Captain Porteous. Edited by William Roughead.

William Palmer. Edited by Geo. H. Knott, Barrister-at-Law.

Mrs. Maybrick. Edited by H. B. Irving.

Dr. Lamson. Edited by H. L. Adam.

Mary Blandy. Edited by William Roughead.

City of Glasgow Bank Directors. Edited by William Wallace, Advocate.

Deacon Brodie. Edited by William Roughead.

James Stewart. Edited by David N. Mackay.

A. J. Monson. Edited by J. W. More, Advocate.

Oscar Slater. Edited by William Roughead.

Eugene Marie Chantrelle. Edited by A. Duncan Smith, Advocate.

The Douglas Cause. Edited by A. Francis Steuart, Advocate.

Mrs. M'Lachlan Edited by William Roughead.

Eugene Aram. Edited by Eric Watson, Barrister-at-Law.

J. A. Dickman. Edited by S. O. Rowan-Hamilton, Barrister-at-Law.

The Seddons. Edited by Filson Young.

Sir Roger Casement. Edited by Geo. H. Knott, Barrister-at-Law.

IN PREPARATION.

The Wainwrights. Edited by H. B. Irving.

Thurtell and Hunt. Edited by Eric Watson.

Burke and Hare. Edited by William Roughead.

Particulars may be had from the Publishers.

[Photo. by Russell.

The Right Hon. Lord Alverstone, Lord Chief Justice of England.

The Trial of

Hawley Harvey Crippen

EDITED

WITH NOTES AND AN INTRODUCTION

BY

FILSON YOUNG

Editor of "The Trial of the Seddons," &c., &c.

ILLUSTRATED

TORONTO

CANADA LAW BOOK COMPANY, LIMITED

KD 075

PRINTED BY
WILLIAM HODGE AND COMPANY, LTD.
GLASGOW AND EDINBURGH
1920

TO

SIR BASIL HOME THOMSON, C.B.

IN RESPECT FOR HIS WORK

AND IN

FRIENDSHIP FOR HIMSELF

3109548

PREFATORY NOTE.

THE "Notable Trials Series" is now well enough established, and has been sufficiently welcomed by the legal as well as the general reader, to make unnecessary any explanation of the appearance in it of the trial of Dr. Crippen. In a case of such world-wide notoriety, the theme inevitably of much speculative and imperfectly informed discussion, it is more than ever useful to have the facts, in so far as the trial revealed them, set forth exactly as they were unfolded to the judge and jury; and it has been possible in the Introduction to enlarge upon some other aspects of the case which were not, and could not, be discussed at the Old Bailey. If the trial is less interesting from a legal point of view than some others, this defect is atoned for by the extraordinary human and dramatic interest with which the story is packed, and which has placed Dr. Crippen in the front rank, so to speak, of convicted murderers.

I have to thank Sir Edward Marshall Hall, K.C., Sir Richard Muir, Mr. Herbert Austin, Clerk of the Central Criminal Court, the Home Office authorities, the Governor of Pentonville Prison, Dr. Rylance, Crippen's former business partner, Inspector Mitchell, Mr. (late Inspector) Dew, and Mrs. Harrison for information, material, and assistance in arriving at the conclusions on which the narrative part of the Introduction is based.

A. B. F. Y.

LONDON, *November*, 1919.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Introduction,	xiii
Leading Dates in the Crippen Case,	xxxv
The Trial—	

FIRST DAY—TUESDAY, 18TH OCTOBER, 1910.

Mr. Muir's Opening Speech for the Crown,	3

Evidence for the Prosecution.

Frederick Lown,	9	F. Pedgrift,	26
Dr. John H. Burroughs,	10	E. W. Stuart,	26
Mrs. C. Martinetti,	12	C. J. Williams,	26
Mrs. L. Smythson,	17	F. Hayles,	27
Mrs. T. Hunn,	18	Miss M. L. Curnow,	27
Bruce Miller,	19	G. M. Rylance,	29
Miss Melinda May,	23	W. Long,	30
Mrs. E. Jackson,	24	E. Brett,	32

SECOND DAY—WEDNESDAY, 19TH OCTOBER, 1910.

Evidence for the Prosecution (continued).

W. Dew,	33	A. F. Leverton,	47
Statement by Accused,	34	D. Gooch,	47
W. Dew (continued),	39	Dr. A. J. Pepper,	47

THIRD DAY—THURSDAY, 20TH OCTOBER, 1910.

Evidence for the Prosecution (concluded).

Dr. B. H. Spilsbury,	62	Dr. A. P. Luff,	74
Dr. T. Marshall,	64	C. Hetherington,	75
A. Robinson,	67	H. Kirby,	76
R. Thompson,	67	W. Hayman,	77
C. Pitt,	67	Mrs. A. Harrison,	77
Dr. W. H. Willcox,	67		

Mr. Tobin's Opening Speech for the Defence,	78

Evidence for the Defence.

H. H. Crippen,	87

CONTENTS.

FOURTH DAY—FRIDAY, 21ST OCTOBER 1910.

Evidence for the Defence (concluded).

	PAGE		PAGE
H. H. Crippen (recalled),	94	Dr. R. C. Wall,	138
Dr. G. M. Turnbull,	130	Dr. A. W. Blyth,	141

Further Evidence for the Prosecution.

W. J. Chilvers, ... 144
Mr. Tobin's Closing Speech for the Defence, ... [illegible]

FIFTH DAY, SATURDAY, 22ND OCTOBER, 1910.

Further Evidence for the Defence.

H. H. Crippen (recalled), ... 151
Mr. Muir's Closing Speech for the Crown, ... 153
The Lord Chief Justice's Charge to the Jury, ... 161
The Verdict, ... 183
The Sentence, ... 183

APPENDICES.

Appendix A—Captain Kendall's Message, ... 187
Appendix B—Published Statement of Dr. Crippen, ... 188
Appendix C—Letter from Dr. Crippen to Ethel le Neve, ... 190
Appendix D—The Trial of Ethel le Neve at the Old Bailey, ... [illegible]
Appendix E—Court of Criminal Appeal—Rex v. Hawley Harvey Crippen, . . 209

LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

The Right Hon. Lord Alverstone, Lord Chief Justice of England, . *Frontispiece*

30 Hilldrop Crescent, ... *facing page* xvii

Mrs. H. H. Crippen, ... ,, 22

Reproduction of Police Bill, ... ,, 40

H. H. Crippen and Miss le Neve in the Dock at Bow Street, . . ,, 94

A. A. Tobin, K.C., ... ,, 146

R. D. Muir, ... ,, 154

THE TRIAL OF H. H. CRIPPEN.

INTRODUCTION.

I.

Most of the interest and part of the terror of great crime are due not to what is abnormal, but to what is normal in it; what we have in common with the criminal, rather than that subtle insanity which differentiates him from us, is what makes us view with so lively an interest a fellow-being who has wandered into these tragic and fatal fields. A mean crime, like that of the brute who knocks an old woman on the head for the sake of the few shillings in her store, has a mean motive; a great crime, like that of the man who murders his wife and little children and commits suicide because he can see only starvation and misery before them, gathers desperately into itself in one wild protest against destiny what is left of nobility and greatness in the man's nature. It is not that his crime has any more legal justification than that of the murdering robber; it has not. On the contrary, it is more of an outrage upon life, and far more damaging in its results upon the community. Yet we do not hate or execrate the author; we profoundly pity him; it is even possible sometimes to recognise a certain terrible beauty in the motive that made him thus make a complete sweep of his little world when it could no longer cope with the great world. There are, at the least, reasons for a great crime; for a mean one there are, at the most, excuses. The region of human morality is not a flat plain; there are hills and valleys in it, deep levels and high levels; there are also certain wild, isolated crags, terrible in their desolation, wrapped in storms and glooms, upon which, nevertheless, a slant of sunshine will sometimes fall, and reveal the wild flowers and jewelled mosses that hide in their awful clefts.

Somewhere between these extremes, far below the highest, but far above the lowest, lies the case of Dr. Crippen, who killed his wife in order to give his life to the woman he loved. His was that rare thing in English annals, a *crime passionel*. True, the author of it was an American, and the victim a German-Russian-Polish-American, but the theatre and setting were those of the most commonplace and humdrum region of London life, and all the circumstances that contributed to its interest were such as are witnessed by thousands of people every day. The trial that followed it is in no sense remarkable from a legal point of view, except possibly with regard to the medical evidence; its chief interest lies in the story itself, in the characters of the people concerned, and in the dramatic flight and arrest at sea of Crippen and his mistress.

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

II.

In the year 1900 there came to London an entirely unremarkable little man, describing himself as an American doctor, to find some place in that large industry that lies on the borderland between genuine healing and the commercial exploitation of the modern human passion for swallowing medicine. This was Dr. Hawley Harvey Crippen, a native of Coldwater, Michigan, where he had been born in the year 1862, his father being a dry goods merchant of that place. It was not his first visit to England; he had previously been here in the year 1883, when at the age of twenty-one he had come to pick up some medical training. His education had followed the ordinary course of studies for the medical profession in America. After receiving a general education at the California University, Michigan, he proceeded to the Hospital College of Cleveland, Ohio. After a little desultory attendance at various London hospitals in 1883, Dr. Crippen had returned to New York, where in 1885 he took a diploma as an ear and eye specialist at the Ophthalmic Hospital there. He afterwards practised at Detroit for two years, at Santiago for two years, at Salt Lake City, at New York, St. Louis, Philadelphia, and Toronto. These movements covered twelve years, from 1885 to 1896.

In 1887 he had married at Santiago his first wife, Charlotte Bell; the following year was born a son, Otto Hawley Crippen, who at the time of the trial was living at Los Angeles. In the year 1890 or 1891 his wife died at Salt Lake City; and from there he returned to New York, where two years later he made the acquaintance of a girl of seventeen, whom he knew as Cora Turner. He fell in love with her, and although at the time he met her she was living as the mistress of another man, he married her and took her with him to St. Louis, where he had an appointment as consulting physician to an optician. He had found out that his wife's real name had not been Cora Turner at all, but Kunigunde Mackamotzki, and that her father was a Russian Pole and her mother a German.

Mrs. Crippen was the possessor of a singing voice, small but of a clear quality, her friends' appreciation of which led her to entertain ambitions with regard to it which afterwards did not turn out to have been justified. Crippen, however, who was nothing if not an indulgent husband, allowed her to have it trained. This was in the year 1899, when they were living in Philadelphia; but Crippen allowed his wife to stay in New York for the purpose of having lessons, for which, of course, he paid, her ambition being that she should be trained for grand opera. She was still there when in 1900 Dr. Crippen came to London as manager for Munyon's advertising business in patent medicines, the offices of which were at that time in Shaftesbury Avenue. About four months later he was

joined by his wife, who had given up her lessons in New York and abandoned the idea of going into grand opera. Her ambitions now lay in the direction of the music hall stage, and she probably regarded England as a promising field for the development of her talents in that direction.

This part of the story may be very briefly dismissed. Although she came over with a sketch of her own design, and many obliging music hall agents undertook to float her in this country, nothing ever came of it save profit to the agents. Her musical sketch turned out to be a thing of which the music and the words both remained yet to be written, and competent artists were hired by the obliging agents to fill these omissions. Mrs. Crippen, who was assiduous in fulfilling all the external conditions of her proposed career, took a stage name of "Belle Elmore," and provided herself with a quantity of dazzling dresses—all, of course, at her good-natured husband's expense. But in fact the only attributes of the music hall artiste to which she ever attained were the stage name and the dresses. From star appearances in a first-rate London music hall her ambitions dwindled down to appearances of any kind at any music hall; and even these, when it came to the point, proved beyond the powers of the agents to secure. One or two feeble appearances were made at very minor music halls; but Mrs. Crippen's talents were so inadequate, and the failure was so obvious, that even these attempts (for which, of course, Dr. Crippen had to pay) were abandoned. The truth was that Mrs. Crippen never had any talent whatever for the stage—not even the very moderate kind that will suffice to make the performance of an attractive young woman with a voice, wearing pretty clothes, and with some financial backing, acceptable to a music hall audience. Poor Mrs. Crippen had to content herself with frequenting music hall circles, reading the *Era*, retaining her "stage" name of Belle Elmore, and adding to her already large stock of theatrical garments. Here was, indeed, a small tragedy. If the poor woman had had any kind of talent, and had really been the music hall favourite that she loved to imagine herself, both she and her husband would probably be living now, each happy in a different sphere; but apparently she had nothing but vanity, no scrap of the ability or industry necessary even for her small purposes. The humblest English music hall has its standards; and "Belle Elmore," in spite of her personal attractions and her pretty clothes, could not attain to them.

III.

People who met the Crippens at this time describe them as cultivating acquaintances among the Bohemian world of music hall performers who meet in small restaurants and are always ready to welcome to their social circle those who are lively company and have money to spend. Her friends

describe Belle Elmore at this period as being of an exceptional liveliness. A loud, clear voice with a strong New York twang would have called attention to her presence wherever she was; but her whole appearance corresponded with the vivacity of her character. She is described as good-looking, with large dark eyes, raven black hair, always elaborately dressed and in the brightest colours. Her appearance was likened by one enthusiast to that of a "bird of paradise." Strange paradise, indeed, from which this poor painted bird had flown, or whither she was flying!

Crippen was then the insignificant-looking little man he always remained, small and short and slight in stature, with a sandy moustache, prominent eyes that looked at you through gold-rimmed spectacles, and a large domed forehead. His rôle in the social life was that of a spectator. He was the silent member of the gay little companies that were entertained by him and the bird of paradise. He was always courteous, always hospitable; apparently contented to look on at and enjoy his wife's little social triumphs among her friends. Her clothes and her jewels were the recipients of a great deal of admiration, and Crippen, who paid for everything, was content to find his share of the enjoyment in the attention and applause which they excited. He often would give her money or a piece of jewellery in the presence of her friends; and was regarded, not surely without justification, as an ideal husband worthy of the good fortune that had befallen him in becoming the proprietor and companion of the bird of paradise.

He was undoubtedly at this time still very fond of his wife, very kind to her, very patient with her extravagancies and the interminable calls which she made upon his time and his means. I do not mean that such things are sacrifices when they are given as Crippen gave them. His attitude to women was peculiar. He was not the type of man that likes to dominate women; he was of the type that loves to be dominated by them; and in his love for showering presents upon his wife in public, and in spending a quite ridiculous proportion of his income in the adorning of her plump little person, he exhibited the symptoms of the psycopathic type to which undoubtedly he belonged.

IV.

It is not my intention to trace in detail the lives of these people further than is necessary to discover their characters. The relations which existed between them at the time of which I have been writing did not continue. The inordinate vanity of the wife demanded more than a husband's admiration, and Crippen's affection for her, which had never been of a very spiritual type, died the natural death of all such passions. It is distasteful to speak of Mrs. Crippen's relations with other men, but

30 Hilldrop Crescent, London, N.
(The Residence of H. H. Crippen, in the Cellar of which the remains of his wife were

it is obvious that the avenue to her affections was not very narrow or difficult of access. This also had its effect on the relations of husband and wife. After two years in England Crippen had to pay a short visit to America, and when he came home he found that she had contracted a friendship with a Mr. Bruce Miller, whose evidence will be found in the course of the trial. Crippen's own written statement is that "she told me that this man visited her, had taken her about, and was very fond of her, also she was very fond of him. . . . It is quite four years since she ever went out to sing, and although we apparently lived happily together, as a matter of fact there were frequent occasions when she got into most violent tempers, and even threatened she would leave me, saying she had a man she could go to, and she would end it all." Is that a true or an untrue statement? As we cannot tell, we have to ask ourselves is it likely or unlikely? Even a very moderate experience of the world would, I imagine be enough to convince a student of this case that it is probably a very accurate description of the state to which affairs had drifted after several years of the life which I have been trying to indicate.

V.

In the year 1905 the Crippens left the rooms in Store Street, Bloomsbury, where they had been living, and established themselves in 39 Hilldrop Crescent—a small semi-detached house in a quiet, leafy crescent off the Camden Road. There had been recently a rather unpleasant trial in connection with the Drouet Institute, and Crippen had severed his connection with it, and returned to the management of Munyon's, where Ethel Le Neve was now engaged as book-keeper and secretary.

The life at Hilldrop Crescent, externally commonplace, reveals on a closer examination some peculiar characteristics. From a friend of the Crippens who lived near them, knew them well, and saw them constantly, we are able to get some interesting sidelights on the life of the household. Mrs. Crippen's florid taste was reflected, so far as their means permitted, in the furniture and decorations. Having seen a green wallpaper in the drawing-room of her friend's house, Mrs. Crippen expressed herself shocked, and said, "Gee! you have got a hoo-doo here. Green paper! You'll have bad luck as sure as fate. When I have a house I won't have green in the house. It shall be pink right away through for luck." And apparently nearly all the rooms in Hilldrop Crescent were decorated in this propitious colour.

I cannot do better than quote some notes of Mrs. Harrison's on the life at Hilldrop Crescent. It is possible that some of her views are

coloured by after events, but they are so interesting that they should be told in her own words.

"Mrs. Crippen was strictly economical in small matters in connection with their private home living. In fact, to such an extent did she carry it that it suggested parsimony. She would search out the cheapest shops for meat, and go to the Caledonian Market and buy cheap fowls. She was always trying to save the pence, but scattering the pounds. It was a peculiar trait in her character. . . . It was shortly after they took up their residence at Hilldrop Crescent (which was in the September of 1905) that the doctor was converted by his wife to Roman Catholicism. She, who had neglected her religion, so far as going to early Mass was concerned, started regularly attending the Roman Catholic church in Kentish Town.

"One Sunday morning they both called early, after Mass, to invite us to a little supper party on the same evening, and it was then the doctor informed us that his wife had made him a Catholic. He always appeared subservient to her wishes. I seemed to think at that time that she appeared more contented and settled down now she had a home to interest her and look after. He was delighted with the air up at Camden Road, and he chuckled with delight when he told us his clothes were becoming too small for him, and that he was getting quite fat. Within a few months he put on flesh, and appeared quite jolly and lively. They were about a great deal together, and their garden and the embellishment of their house seemed a source of great interest. He was a man with no apparent surface vices, or even the usual weaknesses or foibles of the ordinary man Restraint was the one and only evidence of firmness in his character. He was unable to smoke; it made him ill. He refrained from the consumption of alcoholic liquor in the form of wines and spirits, as it affected his heart and digestion. He drank light ale and stout, and that only sparingly. He was not a man's man. No man had ever known him to join in a convivial bout; he was always back to time, and never came home with a meaningless grin on his face at two o'clock in the morning attended by pals from a neighbouring club. He never paid compliments to women, or flirted even in a jocular spirit. His eccentric taste in the matter of neckties and dress generally may be attributed to the fact that it represented feminine taste. His wife purchased his ties, and decided on the pattern of his clothing. She would discuss the colour of his trousers with the tailor, while he stood aside looking on, without venturing to give an opinion. The novelty of the new house employed her thoughts for a time. Her next little harmless whim took the form of desiring to receive paying guests for company. So she set to work to obtain some, and advertised in the *Daily Telegraph*. Several German young men, attracted by the newly furnished house and fascinating little hostess, engaged rooms. Four young men took up their residence with them. Still objecting to domestic servants, Mrs. Crippen undertook the domestic work, with the occasional assistance of a woman to do the cleaning. The doctor had to do his part. He had to rise at six o'clock in the morning to clean the boarders' boots, shovel up the coal, lay the breakfast, and help generally. He was always at his office before eight. It was a trying time, and quite unnecessary exertion for

both, as Crippen was earning well, and gave his wife an ample supply of money; in fact, she had the strings of the family purse, which will be revealed as this strange story unfolds itself. She annexed the extra money from the boarders for personal adornment, and he continued to pay the household bills.

"A Mr. Richards, who was a member of their household for a time, wrote from Paris to the effect that during his sojourn under their roof he witnessed several domestic eruptions of rather a one-sided nature. Mrs. Crippen, excitable and irritable, chiding her husband; Crippen, pale, quiet, imperturbable.

"Ethel Le Neve, the quiet, ladylike, unassuming typewriter, always to time, neat in appearance, methodical, obedient, was interesting the man who employed her. Quietly, imperceptibly she was creeping into his heart and dulling the affection for his wife. Crippen's home life, which could have been made happy with the means at their command, was not restful. Their Sunday was a strenuous day of unrest for a hard-working business man. Early morning Mass, boarders' breakfast to be prepared on their return, boots to clean, beds to make, crockery to wash, dinner for mid-day to be cooked and served, and all this to be done without domestic assistance. After dinner they played cards with their boarders, gave them tea at five o'clock and supper at nine. The novelty of the boarders' society, which entailed so much drudgery, soon wore off. Dr. Crippen hinted that he objected to it. They left shortly afterwards, and the Crippens returned to their strange solitary mode of living. There was no system in the household. Mrs. Crippen disliked fresh air and open windows. There was no regular house cleaning. It was done in spasms. The windows in all the rooms, including the basement, were rarely opened. They had two cats, which were never permitted to roam for fear they should fall victims to the shafts of illicit love. At his wife's desire Crippen built a cage in the garden for them to take the air. Only when they received, were lights shown in the hall or living rooms. They lived practically in the kitchen, which was generally in a state of dirt and disorder. The basement, owing to want of ventilation, smelt earthy and unpleasant. A strange 'creepy' feeling always came over me when I descended—it was so dark and dreary, although it was on a level with the back garden.

"I followed her into the kitchen one morning when she was busy. It was a warm, humid day, and the grimy windows were all tightly closed. On the dresser was a heterogenous mass, consisting of dirty crockery, edibles, collars of the doctor's, false curls of her own, hairpins, brushes, letters, a gold jewelled purse, and other articles. It reminded one of the contents of Mrs. Jellyby's cupboard in Dickens' 'Bleak House,' when the cleaning operations were started for her daughter's wedding. The kitchener and gas stove were brown with rust and cooking stains. The table was littered with packages, saucepans, dirty knives, plates, flat-irons, a washing basin, and a coffee pot. Thrown carelessly across a chair was a lovely white chiffon gown embroidered with silk flowers and mounted over white *glacé*. The little lady cat, who was a prisoner, was scratching wildly at a window in a vain attempt to attract the attention of a passing Don Juan. . . ."

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

VI.

It was at this period that Mrs. Crippen made the acquaintance of several well-known people in the music hall world, and became a member of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild—a society doing quiet, charitable work among the more unfortunate members of the profession. Mrs. Crippen's enthusiasm for the work of this Guild was perhaps the best thing one knows of her. It had the double attraction of appealing to the impulsive kindness of heart which is characteristic of people of her type, and also of bringing her into a more interesting kind of society than would otherwise have been open to her. Mrs. Martinetti, Mrs. Ginnett, Mrs. Eugene Stratton, Lil Hawthorne, and Mrs. Harrison were among those with whom she was thus brought into intimate association. And in this, so to speak, posthumous way she was able to appear herself as a member of the great profession, call herself "Belle Elmore," and appear to be enjoying the aftermath of those brilliant successes which, in fact, she had never enjoyed. She became honorary treasurer of the Guild, which she induced to rent one of the rooms of Dr. Crippen's suite in Albion House, New Oxford Street. It is an ill wind that blows nobody any good; and the music hall strike gave her an opportunity during the famine of actually appearing on the stage, although even in these propitious circumstances fate was against her. She was engaged for a week at the Bedford and Euston Palace, but on her appearance at the Euston (after an agitated week turning over all her most expensive gowns) the audience refused to listen to her, evidently regarding her as a "blackleg," and she was hissed off the stage. The poor creature suffered great distress from this, and was only consoled by Crippen's sympathy and kindness. On this occasion there was an odd and sinister coincidence. An actor, named Weldon Atherstone, who appeared on the same evening, and had a similar reception, was able to sympathise with the weeping "Belle Elmore." Three years later, in July, 1910, in the same week in which London was ringing with the discovery of the remains at Hilldrop Crescent, Atherstone was found shot in the garden of his flat in Battersea. The coincidence was commented upon by Dr. Danford Thomas, the coroner, who a week later was himself dead.

In all this time the Crippens were keeping up a considerable appearance, spending money on entertaining at restaurants and little parties, while in private they were living the somewhat squalid existence described by Mrs. Harrison. Also Crippen's affection for Le Neve was developing. For this quiet, reserved, attractive girl the quiet and reserved Crippen was nourishing a genuine passion. From the strain and storm of existence at home he was finding something like repose and true companionship in his

association with Miss Le Neve. His resources were further strained by his efforts to adorn her in the way he had adorned his wife—so much so that the doctor connected with Munyon's establishment objected to her too smart appearance, and requested her to return to a more sober habit of dress.

In short, the causes were now all assembled which were to produce such tragic results, and only some powerful agent was required to precipitate the tragedy from these ingredients. There was the life at home, sordid and quarrelsome. There as the outward appearance of affluence and display, coupled with the laboriously kept-up appearance of matrimonial felicity. There were the business interests and anxieties, and there was the secret growing passion for Miss Le Neve.

VII.

Here, then, was Crippen living, although not on affectionate, at any rate on endurable terms with his wife. That the relationship would, and indeed must somehow at some time come to an end, was probably in both their minds. They had no children to complicate the relationship, and Mrs. Crippen's former manner of life and her popularity with a certain class of man must have familiarised her with ways in which she could be easily independent of her husband. But that the situation in January had become so intolerable that either thought of murdering the other I do not believe. Murder is, to say the least of it, an extreme step to take, even in marital disagreements; it is an extreme stage to which to carry them; it is an extreme method of solving them. There are thousands of men and women who daily carry the burden that Crippen was carrying, who wake up every morning to another day of a relationship of which bickering and distaste are the elements; who see stretching hopelessly before them a long and dreary vista of such days. But they do not resort to murder as an escape. Except to a maniac, or to a person beside himself with rage, jealousy, hatred, fear, or despair, the deliberate killing of a human companion is a difficult, disagreeable, and indeed abhorrent business. It is also highly dangerous, and (thanks to the law and to the machinery of justice) is almost certain to bring the offender into a situation in comparison with which the unhappiest married life would seem as charming as the memory of Eden must have been to our fallen parents. In such circumstances, tolerated for so long, and therefore tolerable for a little longer, something very acute, sudden, or final, must occur to precipitate such an action. And something of the same character must have occurred in the Crippen household to make the doctor decide that he must not only escape from his wife but murder her. What was it?

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

There are four theories, and only four, which can serve even approximately as a solution of the problem. Let us examine them.

VIII.

The first theory, which may be called the official theory of the prosecution, is that Crippen murdered his wife simply that he might indulge his guilty passion for Ethel Le Neve. This is the kind of motive which is always good enough for a jury, especially when the facts of the murder are proved; but it will not stand intelligent examination. It is not reasonably in accordance either with the facts or with the characters of the people concerned. As for the guilty passion, Crippen had not only enjoyed it for a considerable time, but he obviously did not feel particularly guilty about it; it is even obvious that he took no more trouble to hide it than the dictates of elementary discretion and common sense demanded. It is pretty certain that all his friends and the people connected with him in business knew all about it, and had become so accustomed to it as to take it for granted. Ethel Le Neve was the companion of his business life and of his days; his wife was not even the companion of his nights; and much as he no doubt wished that he was married to Ethel Le Neve and not to Cora Crippen, that in itself could not have been a sufficient motive for him to commit murder. It was always possible for him simply to leave or desert his wife, and live openly with Le Neve. But if he had been going to do that, he would have done it before. When a man is in love with a woman who is not his wife, the time at which he is most likely to desert the wife for the mistress is at the beginning of the new relationship; not when it has been going on for years and become, as it were, regularised. And if that is true of mere desertion, how much more true is it of murder, which requires so much stronger a motive, so much more impulsive a passion. If this theory as to motive were sound, Crippen would surely have committed the crime several years earlier, and not after he had settled down into a routine of existence which was, as I have suggested, if not happy, at any rate full of varied interests and had its private alleviations.

IX.

Another and most ingenious attempt to account for the sudden abolition of Mrs. Crippen is, I think, the invention of Sir Edward Marshall Hall, who developed it at some length in a discussion before a private society in London. This was the theory upon which, if he had defended Crippen, his defence would have been founded; and it was because another line of defence

had been opened at the Police Court before the brief was offered to him that he ultimately declined it.

The theory is that, far from Crippen having ceased to cohabit with his wife, he was in fact something of a victim to her exigencies in that respect; that Mrs. Crippen had an abnormal amative appetite—abnormal, that is to say, not in the nature but in the extent of the appetite; that her husband, devoted as he was to his mistress, found himself the victim of a double demand to which the poor little man's frail physique and advancing years rendered him unequal; and that he sought in the pharmacopœia a remedy for this distressing state of affairs. That having known, from his former experience in lunatic asylums, that hyoscin is sometimes used as a sexual depressant in cases of acute nymphomania, he conceived the idea of administering a few ce. . of this drug in order to keep his wife quiet. That although he knew the drug was used he did not know what the dose was, and innocently went out and bought 5 grains, the whole of which he administered to his wife in a cup of coffee. And that when, instead of falling quietly asleep, Mrs. Crippen, to the horror and surprise of her husband, incontinently died, he was so frightened at what he had done and foresaw such difficulty in explaining it that he cut up, burned, and otherwise disposed of the remains, and gave his friends the explanation of Mrs. Crippen's disappearance which in fact he did give. That, in short, if when she died he had run out and told a policeman of his dreadful mistake, he would have been an object of sympathy rather than of legal vengeance.

The ingenuity of this theory cannot be denied; and there is a touch of true comedy in it, in spite of the grim facts, which makes one regret that it had not the chance of being fully developed in a criminal Court. Sir Edward Marshall Hall is not only convinced that he could have satisfied the jury and got the charge reduced to one of manslaughter, but (a much more extreme belief) he even thinks this to be the true explanation of the facts. But I am afraid that it will not do either. There is the fact that, having occupied a common room and bed in their former homes, the Crippens had separate rooms at Hilldrop Crescent. It is all very well to represent Crippen as the victim of the inordinate concupiscence of his wife as well as of his own passion for his mistress; but these are two fires between which a man in his situation cannot really be forced to remain. Although Courts of law continue to make orders for the restitution of conjugal rights, no method of enforcing them has so far been discovered; and relief from such a situation as this theory of the case presumes could be found in a purely negative line of conduct. Moreover (and here is the greatest weakness of this theory) it is almost unthinkable that a medical man who knew the properties of hydrobromide of hyoscin could be totally ignorant of the amount of the dose. It is quite possible that he would not know the minute variations of the

dose for different cases; but that he should make such a wild mistake as lies in the difference between half a grain and 5 grains is unthinkable. That Crippen administered 5 grains is to be inferred not only from the amount discovered in the remains, but also from the fact that no residue of the drug was discovered in his possession; and it would have been of vital importance to him to produce such residue, in view of his own explanation as to his reason for purchasing hyoscin. So that this theory, ingenious as it is and profoundly interesting as its development would have been as a legal defence, must in my view be dismissed, not so much because it is unreasonable as because it is discordant with the revealed facts of the case.

X.

There is a third theory to which, after full consideration of all the mysterious elements in the problem, I am driven as the most reasonable explanation of this extreme and violent act on the part of a man whose characteristics, as revealed to his associates through a number of years, were patience, kindness, and amiability. It is that the more or less sudden act which precipitated the tragedy came from Mrs. Crippen herself, in the form of a definite decision to leave her husband and take with her the whole available capital of the family, including the money in the bank and the jewellery.

In regard to this there is a very important fact which did not and could not come out at the trial, but goes far to explain what is otherwise almost inexplicable. It is known that Mrs. Crippen had more than once in the month of January told one of her friends that if Crippen did not give up his association with Miss Le Neve she intended to leave him, and to take her money with her. It will be observed that she spoke of it as "her" money, and it is clear that she so regarded it. What view Crippen himself took of this scheme I do not know, but it is at least strange that the bulk of their money was held in a joint account. It is not in accordance with the orderly and business-like character of Crippen that he should have placed all his own resources, on which he depended not only for his household expenses, but also for the conduct of the various little businesses in which he from time to time engaged, at the mercy of a woman like his wife. He knew her character perfectly well—no one better; he must have known that, whatever qualities she possessed, she was not the sort of woman in whose hands it would be desirable to place the control of one's finances. In regard to the £600 on deposit in the Charing Cross Bank, some of this had been deposited in the joint names of husband and wife, and some in the name of Belle Elmore. Now, Mrs. Crippen had no means of getting money unless it was given to her by her

husband or some one else. She never earned any money during the five years which are the crucial period in this case. Crippen was, even on the admission of her own friends, liberal to her when he had money, and gave her whatever she required in accordance with his means. But the kind of salaries that Crippen earned did not entirely account for the sums of money that were from time to time in the possession of these two people, jointly or severally. It is true that in some of his businesses, although on a small salary (£3 or £4 a week), he was entitled to commission; but latterly, at any rate, that commission could not have amounted to anything considerable. In 1905, when he was manager of the Sovereign Remedy Company, it failed. From there he went as physician to the Drouet Company, and it failed; next he went to the Aural Clinic Company, and in six months it also failed. Then he returned to Munyon's as manager, and after some two years took it over as an agency—which seems to mean that the proprietors did not consider the branch sufficiently profitable to justify his salary, and allowed him to run it on an agent's commission. In November, 1909, he had ceased to be manager of the agency, and was simply remaining on commission; and even this arrangement was to terminate on the 31st of January, 1910. Undoubtedly he had various side lines of activity in the patent medicine business, but they were only side lines; and probably at the time of the murder his chief source of income was the partnership in a dental business which he had with Dr. Rylance at Albion House, New Oxford Street. But in all these affairs, having regard to the fact that he had a house to keep up and a wife to support who, for her station in life, was notoriously extravagant, there does not seem much room for the laying by of money and the purchase of expensive jewellery. Where, then, did the money come from? And how far was Mrs. Crippen justified in her claim to it as her own property?

We must remember what she had been and what she was. Undoubtedly she occasionally received "presents" from various men; and whether these took the form of money or jewellery, or both, one can understand that she would regard them as entirely her own property and at her own disposal. What Crippen knew of their origin I cannot tell. The veil of mystery which surrounds so much of the character of this quiet and reserved man is not lifted to show any light on this aspect of the case. He was indifferent to his wife, who, by her vanity, her extravagance, her shrewishness, had long worn out the affection in which he had formerly held her and his pride in the kind of attention that she attracted. Crippen was not a robust man physically; his vitality was of a nervous sort. She, on the other hand, was robust and animal. Her vitality was of that loud, aggressive, and physical kind that seems to exhaust the atmosphere

round it, and is undoubtedly exhausting to live with. In all probability, therefore, he did not ultimately care what she did, where she went, or whom she saw, as long as his life was allowed to go on without interruption. Of course, there were quarrels; "Belle Elmore," who could be so pleasant and attractive to her music hall friends, was not the sort of woman to withhold her words on provocation, or to take a philosophic view of her husband's *liaison*. It is true that she had ceased to care for him, and spared him neither in public nor in private before her friends; but in the mean of soul, vanity takes the place of nobler passions, and though she did not want Crippen for herself, it was not in accordance with her vanity that he should enjoy the love of any other woman. She was probably getting bored with the Hilldrop Crescent existence; unless there was plenty of money to gild it, that was too dingy a life for the kind of woman she conceived herself to be. Also she had reached that age—thirty-five years—when a woman of her race begins to realise that her youth is over, and that the time in which her attractions can still pass current in the world of men is growing short. She had any amount of clothes, plenty of jewellery, some money. Why not pick a quarrel with Crippen, and in the disguise of a virtuous and ill-used wife fly to the protection of some man who was, or whom she believed to be, ready to receive her!

I believe that somewhere about the middle of January, 1910, she made this threat to Crippen, and perhaps began to look about her for the means to carry it out. I believe that he was worried, both on account of money and his business affairs, and possibly also through his love for Ethel Le Neve. It is possible that she, as well as Mrs. Crippen, was discontented with the existing situation; it would be remarkable if she were not. Although she had given herself entirely to Crippen, and knew herself to be the object of his very real devotion, she was still working as an ordinary typist at Munyon's; and the contrast between her situation and that of the woman who had the official position of Crippen's wife and the spending of the money, the wearing of the clothes and jewellery, and the treasurership of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild, and all the rest of it, must have been increasingly disagreeable. There is no evidence that she put any pressure of this nature on Crippen; it would not be fair to suggest that she did. But perhaps all the more for that reason would Crippen desire to give to the woman he loved what was at present being wasted on the woman he did not love. If his wife were to go away as she threatened, and take all her possessions with her, the situation would be worse instead of better. There would be a scandal in their little world; there would be no money just at the time when it was most needed; there would be none of the jewellery which Crippen longed to see adorning the person of his

mistress. Remember Crippen's attitude to jewellery. Undoubtedly he had bought, and his wife possessed, jewellery of a value quite unusual for people in their circumstances; and there is no doubt that at the time when he was in love with his wife he found, as other men have found, an actual stimulus to his passion in seeing her hung about with precious and dazzling things. He greatly desired, now that his passion was centred on Ethel Le Neve, to give it some indulgence in the same way. If Mrs. Crippen went away and took everything with her there was an end to these hopes. But what if she were to die?

XI.

Here came the turning point in Crippen's life, when, from being a much-tried and much-enduring man, encoiled by circumstances and the consequences of his own actions, he became a criminal. It is a deep and unfathomable chasm that divides the two conditions, but it may be a very narrow one. Upon what plank he crossed or what exasperating word or deed goaded him to make the leap, I do not know or expect ever to learn. But from that moment he never wavered. He went and bought the hyoscin—always considerate, you see, even in the weapon he used to kill his wife. He had decided that it would be better that she should cease to exist; and his ingenuity and consideration combined hit upon what was at once the most merciful and the safest poison he could have used.

From the 19th of January, when the hyoscin came into his possession, he was probably considering the means and opportunity of using it. It is impossible to say whether its employment on the night of the 31st of January, when the Martinettis dined with them, was accidental or premeditated. It may have been in his mind to do it after an apparently amicable evening in the presence of friends, when he and his wife could be seen in an atmosphere of matrimonial amity. If so, that scheme was rather frustrated by the fact that Mrs. Crippen rated him soundly in the presence of the Martinettis for allowing Mr. Martinetti to go upstairs to the lavatory by himself, instead of escorted by his host. The matters into which one descends here are minute indeed, but who can say what bearing they may not have had on the destinies of those present? Mrs. Crippen may have been anxious to have a word alone with Mrs. Martinetti, and have been enraged with Crippen for not giving her the opportunity. Otherwise, seeing that Mr. Martinetti knew the house well, and that they were in the habit of dining there at least once a week, Mrs. Crippen's annoyance with her husband seems to have been excessive. However, it may have been enough; it may have been the spark that fired the train,

and what is certain is the[illegible]rs. Crippen was never seen alive after that evening, and that her remains, containing traces of what had been a large dose of hydrobromide of hyoscin, were subsequently discovered beneath the floor of the coal cellar below the steps.

The only other theory with which the facts may be brought into accordance is one which would involve the collusion of an accomplice, and for obvious reasons cannot be discussed.

XII.

But taking the third theory as the one which is the most reasonable of those that are open to us, Crippen's subsequent conduct is all of a piece, and throws a profoundly interesting light on his character. Across the chasm which separates the ordinary citizen from the criminal, he had taken the fatal and decisive step; but having done so, instead of going off, like so many murderers, to wander in the wilderness as an outlaw, he resumed his ordinary course of life; he kept straight on; only now he walked on the far side of the narrow abyss. If the course of his life were to be marked on a chart one would not see it, as is usual in the case of criminals, turning suddenly at a right angle and continuing in that direction; it would appear as a straight course with one little step aside in the middle of it, and then continuing as before. It is certain that he showed no disturbance, remorse or fright for the horrid deed that he had committed; and I believe that he did not feel any. In some obscure way he justified to himself what he had done without violating his conscience, because, as far as one can judge, his life was now happier than it had been before. But on the assumption that he committed this crime out of love for his mistress, his subsequent conduct was perfectly consistent. He took all the necessary steps, and took them with great skill and coolness, to conceal all traces of the crime. The bones, limbs, and head, as well as certain characteristic organs, had all been removed from the discovered remains, and the evidence was that they had been removed by a hand skilled in dissection. No one knows how they were disposed of; but it must have been a work of days. One theory is that it was done in the bath, and the bones and limbs burned in the kitchen grate, while the head was got rid of during Crippen's subsequent trip to Dieppe—dropped overboard in a handbag. But whatever the method, it must have involved labours physically exhausting, and of a nature horrible to contemplate.

He invented a story to account for his wife's disappearance. With a certain completeness of artistic circumstances he developed her disappearance into her death in far-away California; and

he devoted himself to the girl for whose affections he was to pay such a price. It is characteristic of the inconsistency of human prejudice that half the indignation and horror aroused against him was because of the fact that he cut up his wife's remains, and that he wrote hypocritical letters to the music hall ladies about her death in California. How absurd is such an attitude. The crime was in murdering his wife; it was a crime of such magnitude that nothing he could do afterwards could possibly aggravate it, unless it had involved cruelty or betrayal of some one who was alive. On the contrary, granting the crime and granting its enormity, what he did afterwards was technically admirable. It was his business to abolish all trace of it, and that he very nearly succeeded in doing. If he were going to tell a lie about his wife's death in California, he had better do it well than badly; and, in fact, he did it extremely well. If he had murdered his wife in order to be happy with Le Neve, the least he could do was to devote himself to her; and from that moment until the morning he was hanged in Pentonville Prison he had no other thought but of her welfare, no other object but to secure her safety and happiness, no other fear but that any consequence of his action should recoil upon her.

XIII.

But human vanity, which is woven like a gaudy thread through the dark fabric of this story, was to prove his undoing. His wife gone, her disappearance explained and her death announced, with circumstantial details, including memorial cards and announcements in the *Era*—matters which occupied a couple of months—Crippen took Miss Le Neve more or less openly to live with him in Hilldrop Crescent (12th March). My theory as to the crime is supported by the fact that on 2nd and 9th February Crippen pawned jewellery to the value of £195. He had now command of money; Miss Le Neve was living with him, and he could begin to enjoy the fruits of his dreadful action. They became bolder and more open in the enjoyment of the situation. She was seen at a charity dinner and dance on 20th February, wearing some of the jewellery which had been Mrs. Crippen's. This seems to have been too much for some of the lady friends of Mrs. Crippen. Perhaps some of them felt that had she made a will she would have divided her treasured possessions among them. They knew that the last person whom she would have wished to enjoy them was Miss Le Neve. They talked, they wondered, they became suspicious; and on 30th June Mr. Nash went to Scotland Yard and raised the whole question of Mrs. Crippen's disappearance.

A week later Inspector Dew and Sergeant Mitchell began their inquiries.

visiting Crippen at his office. He then told them that the whole story of Mrs. Crippen's death was untrue, that she had left him, he knew not with whom, and that to avoid scandal he had invented the story of her journey to California, her illness, and death. He gave a signed statement which will be found in its place in the evidence [1] and showed every desire to give them what assistance he could in discovering the whereabouts of his wife. This statement was given to Inspector Dew in Crippen's office, in the intervals between medical consultations and tooth-pulling; he would dictate a little of it, go out and extract a tooth, and return and dictate some more. It occupied the greater part of the day, and Crippen and Inspector Dew went out and had lunch together at the Holborn Restaurant in the middle of it. Crippen took the officers to Hilldrop Crescent, assisting them to examine everything. They went all over the house from attic to cellar, and found nothing whatever inconsistent with his story. Inspector Dew has told me that on this day, 8th July, having been almost continually with Crippen and having gone over the whole house, he had found nothing whatever to lead him to suppose that there was anything in the case other than what Crippen had told him. The investigation was to all intents and purposes finished.

XIV.

And then something broke down. It was not the nerve of Crippen; but it was not improbably the nerve of Miss Le Neve. It is impossible to be sure whether or not she knew the truth; it is quite possible, as both she and Crippen swore, that she did not. If she did, there would be little wonder that the situation had become too much for her. But even if she did not, she may have become uneasy and suspicious, and Crippen may have felt, now that there was an investigation afoot, that in some way her nerve would give way and her manner awake suspicion, and that the strain of further examination would prove altogether too much for her. He resolved on instant flight. Some very powerful influence must have been at work to induce Miss Le Neve to submit to the daring scheme of sudden flight disguised as a boy. If they had only known it, the worst was over; the probability is that if they had not gone away the matter would have been dropped, and Mrs. Crippen's disappearance ranked among the many unsolved mysteries of London life. But they did not know it; and Crippen with masterly coolness arranged the details of the flight. He left his affairs in order; found time, even in this hurried hour of preparation, to write letters characterised by his usual courtesy which would enable his business associates to suffer the least possible embarrassment through his

[1] See p. 34.

departure. Unsuspected and uninterrupted, they got away to Rotterdam and to Antwerp, where in the names of Mr. and Master Robinson they took passage for Quebec on the s.s. "Montrose," sailing on 20th July.

XV.

But in the meantime something had happened in London which renewed in a powerful and fatal form the almost extinct current of official suspicion. Inspector Dew, for no particular reason, decided to return on Monday, 11th July, to Albion House, Crippen's office, to ask some supplementary questions. There he heard that Crippen had gone away. His suspicions now thoroughly awakened, he returned to Hilldrop Crescent, and made a further search of the house, taking up portions of the garden, examining the coal cellar, testing the bricks with his foot; but found nothing. With a fortunate pertinacity which won him his distinction in this case, he returned to the search on the next day, and again on the following day, the 13th, when, probing the bricks of the cellar floor with a poker, he discovered that one of them could be raised. Having got a few more out by the same process, he got a spade and began to dig, and a few inches down came upon a compact mass of animal remains which, on expert investigation, proved to be the greater part of the contents of a human body from which the head, limbs, and bones were missing, as were also those particular organs which would have determined the sex of the body. On the 16th July a warrant was issued for the arrest of Crippen and Miss Le Neve, but, as has been seen, they had successfully escaped, and were then, and during the four following days, waiting for the "Montrose" to sail from Antwerp.

The tragic chapters of the story succeeded one another with dramatic rapidity. There had been time for the sensational discovery at Hilldrop Crescent to be circularised, and the description of the two fugitives reached Antwerp before the ship sailed. The captain had read them, and he had not been at sea two days before he thought he had identified in Mr. and Master Robinson the two people who were wanted by the police, and for information as to whom the *Daily Mail* had offered a reward of £100. Wireless telegraphy, then in its early commercial stages, was used for the first time in the science of criminal detection. Captain Kendall sent on the 22nd a long wireless message (which will be found as an appendix) relating his discovery, and for nine days he kept his victims all unsuspicious of the dreadful part in their lives which the crackling discharge of the wireless played, coaxing them to talk and laugh, and luring them on to the exposure of their not very successful disguise. On the 23rd July Dew and Mitchell sailed from Liverpool, and on the 31st Crippen

and Miss Le Neve were arrested when the ship was off Father Point, Dew coming on board disguised as a pilot; and, after extradition proceedings at Quebec, were brought back to London for trial.

XVI.

The way in which, by the accidental inclusion of part of a pyjama jacket among the remains, the date at which they were buried—otherwise unascertainable—was absolutely fixed within certain limits; the brilliant and laborious analysis which proved that these few pieces of flesh and skin had been part of a body which had contained a fatal dose of hyoscin; the extraordinary contradiction and breakdown of the experts engaged for the defence—these may all be discovered in the report of the trial. Mr. Muir (now Sir Richard) was never in all his long career as a criminal prosecutor more formidable and unflinching than in his masterly weaving together of the web which bound Crippen to his ultimate fate. But the most amazing feature of the trial was the absolute coolness and imperturbability of Crippen in the long and terrible cross-examination which will be read in its place. The hideous moment in which the pieces of his dead wife's skin were handed round in a soup plate for inspection left him, alone of all the people in that crowded Court, quite unmoved. He peered at them with an intelligent curiosity as though they had been mere museum specimens. Not by one word or tremor did this frail little man betray any sign of his terrible position, to which, nevertheless, as we know from other evidence, he was acutely and tragically sensitive. This behaviour characterised him up to his very last moments of life. And just as the Crown, with all its resources, had not been able to produce a single person who could say otherwise than that in every relationship of life Crippen had always behaved with kindness, consideration, and unselfishness, so every one who came in contact with him from his trial to his death—and some of them were fairly hardened prison officials—looked upon him not only with respect, but with something like affection.

He never gave any trouble, showed any concern or asked for any benefit for himself; all his concern and all his requests were for the woman he loved. I have seen the tragic little book in which it was the duty of the warders who sat and watched with him day and night in the condemned cell to record his conduct from hour to hour, and although I do not feel myself free to quote from it, there is nothing in that record that shows any preoccupation whatever except anxiety on behalf of another. The only time he broke down was when, late on the night before his execution, the Governor of Pentonville prison brought him a telegram of farewell from Miss Le Neve, and his one request, when the Governor at this same

midnight interview asked him if there was anything he could possibly do for him, was that the one or two letters that he had received from her, and her photograph, should be buried in the prison grave with him on the morrow. This promise was given and kept.

XVII.

No one will pretend to read in these pages any apology or justification for a proved murder. They are an attempt to trace the threads of motive throughout what is a very remarkable instance of good and bad influences acting on human conduct. Rightly read and understood this is an admonishing, sobering and instructive story. We may consider Crippen a hateful man; but nobody who came in contact with him was able to say so. From those who, whether in business relations or as friends of his wife, had no reason to like or praise him, to the officials of the prison in which he was executed as a condemned murderer, there is but one chorus of testimony to his character as tested by daily intercourse with his fellow-men; even in regard to the very circumstances surrounding his crime, or at any rate following it, there is the same extraordinary feature; the very crime itself brought out in him high human qualities.

There are two sides to the story—the physical, which is sordid, dreadful, and revolting, and the spiritual, which is good and heroic; to the extent that most honest men, finding themselves in the situation in which he ultimately found himself, for whatever reason, and tried by the tests by which he was tried, would be glad to come out of them half so well. Such a story can only be understood by the aid of the imagination; and it should remind us, in the judgments that we pass on our fellow-men, never to forget the dual nature of human character and the mystery in virtue of which acts of great moral obliquity may march with conduct above the ordinary standards—conduct which, if we wish to be just, as we hope for justice to ourselves, should be remembered and recorded no less than the crime.

Leading Dates in the Crippen Case.

1910.		
January	1	Crippen orders 5 grains of hyoscin from Messrs. Lewis & Burrows.
	19	He gets the hyoscin.
	31	Mr. and Mrs. Martinetti dine with the Crippens at 30 Hilldrop Crescent.
February	1	Dr. Crippen calls to enquire for Mr. Martinetti.
	2	Crippen pawns ring and earrings for £80.
	2	Letter received by the Music Hall Ladies' Guild, containing Mr. Crippen's resignation.
	9	Crippen pawns brooch and rings for £115.
	20	Crippen and Le Neve attend the dinner and ball of the Benevolent Fund.
March	12	Miss Le Neve gives up her situation and goes to live with Crippen at 39 Hilldrop Crescent.
	16	Crippen gives his landlord 3 months' notice as to the tenancy of 39 Hilldrop Crescent.
	23	Crippen and Le Neve go to Dieppe for Easter.
	24	Telegram to Mrs. Martinetti from Crippen announcing his wife's death.
	26	Obituary notice of Mrs. Crippen in *The Era*.
June	18	Crippen arranged with his landlord to stay on at Hilldrop Crescent until 29th of September.
	28	Mr. Nash questions Crippen about his wife's remains.
	30	Mr. Nash goes to Scotland Yard.
July	8	Inspector Dew and Sergeant Mitchell visit Crippen at Albion House, and accompany him to Hilldrop Crescent
	9	Crippen and Miss Le Neve leave London. Dew at Hilldrop Crescent.
	9	Description of Mrs. Crippen circulated.
	11	Description of Crippen and Miss Le Neve circulated by Police.
	12	Search at Hilldrop Crescent continued.
	13	Human remains discovered beneath the cellar at Hilldrop Crescent.
	16	Warrant issued for the arrest of Crippen and Miss Le Neve.
	20	S.S. "Montrose" sails from Antwerp, with Crippen and Miss Le Neve travelling disguised as father and son.
	22	Wireless message received from Captain Kendall of the "Montrose."
	23	Inspector Dew and Sergeant Mitchell sail from Liverpool in S.S. "Laurentic."
	31	Arrest of Crippen and Miss Le Neve at sea off Father Point.
August	8	Extradition proceedings at Quebec.
	20	Crippen and Miss Le Neve sail for England in custody.
	28	Arrival at Liverpool.
	29	Police Court proceedings opened at Bow Street.
September	2	Crippen and Miss Le Neve committed for trial.
	26	Coroner's jury returns a verdict of wilful murder against Crippen.
October	10	Cora Crippen's remains buried at Finchley Cemetery.
	18	Trial of Crippen opened at Old Bailey.
	21	Crippen found guilty and sentenced to death.
November	5	Crippen's appeal to the Court of Criminal Appeal heard and dismissed.
	23	Crippen executed at Pentonville.

THE TRIAL

WITHIN THE

CENTRAL CRIMINAL COURT,

OLD BAILEY, LONDON,

TUESDAY, 18th OCTOBER, 1910.

Judge—

THE RIGHT HON. LORD ALVERSTONE, Lord Chief Justice of England.

Counsel for the Crown—

Mr. R. D. MUIR,

Mr. TRAVERS HUMPHREYS, and

Mr. INGLEBY ODDIE.

(Instructed by the Director of Public Prosecutions.)

Counsel for the Prisoner—

Mr. TOBIN, K.C.,

Mr. HUNTLY JENKINS, and

Mr. ROOME.

(Instructed by Messrs. Arthur Newton & Co.)

THE TRIAL.

First Day—Tuesday, 18th October, 1910.

The Clerk of the Court—Hawley Harvey Crippen, you are indicted and also charged on the coroner's inquisition with the wilful murder of Cora Crippen on the 1st February last. Are you guilty or not guilty?

The Prisoner—Not guilty, my lord.

Opening Statement for the Crown.

Mr. Muir, in opening the case for the Crown, began by tracing the earlier personal history of the prisoner and of his wife, whom he married as his second wife in 1892 or 1893, and also the circumstances of their married life at Hilldrop Crescent, down to the end of last year. So far as their friends were concerned, the relations between husband and wife seemed to be of the best possible kind; they lived together apparently on affectionate terms. The prisoner had not for some four years, however, according to his own statement, cohabited with his wife, but had during three years of that period been carrying on an intrigue with a young woman, Ethel Le Neve, who had been in his service as a typist, and for three years he had been having immoral relations with her of a clandestine kind, never staying away from home at night, but meeting her in hotels in the daytime. That being so, the position was a strange one. The prisoner said he provided all the money for the home in which he and his wife were living. If that was so, he was keeping up an establishment for a woman towards whom, according to himself, he had no affection at all. As regards pecuniary circumstances, the prisoner and his wife during some years of their married life were putting by money. Between March, 1905, and March, 1909, they had deposited with the Charing Cross Bank various sums, amounting in all to £600. These were deposited, some in the joint names of husband and wife, and some in the name of the wife alone by which she was generally known—Belle Elmore. In the beginning of the present year the financial position was not so good. Up to November the prisoner had been in receipt of a weekly salary of £3 from the business known as Munyon's Remedies, but that salary ceased, and he became their agent in this country on commission. On 31st January of the present year his relations with Munyon's Remedies ceased altogether—a remarkable coincidence of date, because 31st January was the critical date in this case. The prisoner had some other businesses, but it was doubtful whether any of them was a source of revenue to him at all. It was quite certain that at the date referred to the prisoner was pressed for money. The position, therefore, was this—his affection

Mr. Muir

fixed upon Ethel Le Neve, and himself desirous of establishing closer relations with that young woman; the physical presence of his wife an obstacle to those relations: the fact that he had no money another obstacle. If Belle Elmore died both those obstacles would be removed, because Belle Elmore's money, and property which could be converted into money, would enable him to keep Ethel Le Neve, which at that time he was unable to do.

That was the state of things on 31st January. On that day the prisoner desired that Mr. Paul Martinetti and his wife should spend the evening with him and his wife. He pressed the invitation, and it was accepted. Mrs. Crippen was in the best of health and spirits. So there were Mr. and Mrs. Martinetti witnesses, if ever they should be required, to the fact that on the early morning of 1st February Mr. and Mrs. Crippen were on their usual affectionate terms, and if Mrs. Crippen should from that moment disappear from the sight of all who knew her, who would suspect the kind, attentive, and affectionate husband as being the cause? Belle Elmore was a woman who attracted friends—a busy woman, enjoying life for the pleasure it gave her and for the good she could do to others. She was described as a bright, vivacious woman, fond of life, fond—perhaps inordinately fond—of dress and jewellery. Her friends said she was a good correspondent; but from the moment that Mr. and Mrs. Martinetti left the house in the early morning of 1st February she passed out of the world which knew her as completely as if she were dead. She left behind her everything she would have left if she had then died—money, jewels, furs, clothes, home, and husband. The prisoner made up his mind that she had left never to return. He at once began to convert her property, and on 12th March Ethel Le Neve, who had been seen wearing a brooch and furs belonging to Belle Elmore, went permanently to live with him at 39 Hilldrop Crescent. Crippen was therefore quite certain that his wife would never return, but he did not tell her friends he knew she would never return. He started a campaign of lies to account for her disappearance. He knew that if his wife did not attend the meeting of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild on 2nd February inquiries would be made, and so he sent by the hand of Le Neve two letters to the Guild and to Miss May, one of the officials of the Guild. Then came the story of her disappearance to America, and the invention of further lies—because a visit to America might be expected to terminate at some time or other—to account for the fact that she was never to return. On 23rd March he told Mrs. Martinetti that he had very bad news, and was momentarily expecting worse. He said that if anything should happen to Belle he was going to France for a week. Mrs. Martinetti said, "Whatever for?" He said, "Oh, I shall want a change," the truth being that at that time he had arranged an Easter trip to Dieppe with Ethel Le Neve. The slate had to be wiped clean of Belle Elmore before he started, and from Victoria on the early morning of 24th March he sent the telegram to Mrs. Martinetti stating that Belle died the previous night at six o'clock; and, that nothing should remain to interfere with the rest he was seeking in France, he sent the advertisement to the *Era* announcing that Belle Elmore had died in California—no nearer than that—on 23rd March. The object of the advertisement was to stop people asking

Opening Statement for the Crown.

a lot of questions. But Belle Elmore's friends were not prevented from asking a lot of questions, and they got some answers. They obtained, too, the address of Crippen's son. The ladies wished to send a wreath to their friend's grave in California. They were told that the wreath was no use—she had been cremated, and her ashes were to be brought home; they could have their little ceremony then. And on 18th May he solemnly announced that he had the ashes at home.

Then the ladies became still more curious. They wanted to know the name under which Belle Elmore sailed for America, but Crippen was not at all sure about it. It must have been obvious to Crippen then that his statements with regard to the disappearance of Belle Elmore were being doubted, and it was perfectly plain after his interview with Chief Inspector Dew that it was useless to proceed with the stories he had told. He said to the inspector, "It is untrue what I have told them about her death. So far as I know she is alive." Crippen then made a long statement giving quite a new version of his wife's disappearance. He said that in 1902 or thereabouts he had to visit America, and that while he was away his wife had formed the acquaintance of a man named Bruce Miller, becoming attached to him; that upon his return her manner changed, and that she threatened in outbursts of temper to leave him and go to Bruce Miller; and that she had said that when she left him she would pass altogether out of his life, and that he would never hear from her again. He went on to say that because of a lack of courtesy to Mr. Martinetti at the dinner party on 31st January his wife said that this was the finish of it, that she would go, and that he could do what he thought best to cover up the scandal with the Guild and their mutual friends. On 1st February he returned from business to find his wife gone, and then he said that he sat down to think how he could account for her absence. Crippen in this statement said that he had never pawned any of his wife's jewels. That he must have shown to be false, as were also the statements which he gave to account for his wife's disappearance. He said that she had gone to join Bruce Miller. Bruce Miller would be called, and he would say that he had not seen Belle Elmore since 1904.

Almost while he was in the act of making those statements in order to gain a few hours' delay from the police officer who was making the inquiries, the prisoner was preparing for flight. The jury had to ask themselves why Crippen left, what it was he had to fear if his statement was true, that as far as he knew, Belle Elmore was alive. If that statement was true he had nothing to fear. He had nothing to fly from. But he fled. What he fled from was found on 13th July, when under the brick floor in the cellar of the house in Hilldrop Crescent where Belle Elmore was last seen alive on 1st February, where she was left alone at half-past one in the morning of that day with the prisoner, the police found human remains. It would be for the jury to say whether that was what Crippen had fled from.

Whose were the remains so found? On 14th July they were carefully examined where they lay in the cellar by Mr. Pepper, the eminent surgeon, and by Dr. Marshall, the police surgeon; and, having been examined so that those gentlemen were able to speak to the position of things as then existing, those human remains and some other things that

Mr. Muir

were found with them were removed to the mortuary, and there they were subjected to a critical examination. The remains were headless, limbless, and boneless, and the sex could not be certainly determined on anatomical grounds. But some Hinde's curlers, with long human hair in them, and some feminine under-garments might be said to indicate that the remains were those of a woman. On the other hand, there were also in that grave with the remains some pieces of a man's pyjama suit and a large handkerchief which was probably not a woman's. The identification of the remains was almost impossible; but there were certain indications. The human hair in the Hinde's curlers was naturally a dark brown, and it had been bleached to a lighter colour. Belle Elmore's hair was a dark brown, and she was in the habit of bleaching it to a lighter colour. Those facts were undoubtedly true of many other women besides Belle Elmore. The under-garments had been seen by some of Belle Elmore's friends, and they were such as Belle Elmore was in the habit of wearing, but they were also such as many other women besides Belle Elmore would wear. One piece of flesh was identified as coming from the lower part of the abdominal wall, and it had upon it an old scar. Belle Elmore was, in fact, operated upon in that region in 1892 or 1893, and the scar remained upon her body up to the time of her death, and was seen by two persons who would be called. The place of burial was significant. It was in the house occupied by Crippen and Belle Elmore together from 21st September, 1905, up to 1st February, 1910, and by nobody else, and in the house where Belle Elmore was last seen alive alone with the prisoner. Upon those facts it was for the jury to say whether they were satisfied that those remains were the remains, and could only be the remains, of the missing woman Belle Elmore

Another question that the jury would have seriously to consider was, who put the remains where they were found? In endeavouring to answer that question they would ask themselves, who but Crippen had the opportunity to put them there, if the surgeons were accurate as to the date of the burial—some period of between eight months at the longest and four months at the shortest? Belle Elmore disappeared on 1st February, five and a half months before 13th July, when the remains were unearthed. The remains were mutilated in a way which indicated to the skilled mind of the surgeon that the person who did it had some acquaintance with anatomy and some dexterity in dealing with the dead bodies of either human beings or other animals. Crippen had a very good degree; he practised in America, and, according to his own statement, before he took his degree in America he spent some time in London visiting the hospitals. The putting of the remains in the place described and the preparing of the hole in the cellar was an operation which would require both considerable time and entire freedom from observation. And from 1st February onwards for some considerable time Crippen was alone in the house. There were grounds for saying that the pieces of a pyjama jacket found with the remains belonged to Crippen. That was what Crippen left behind when he fled on 9th July.

The prisoner was not seen again by Inspector Dew until 31st July. Counsel narrated the story of the pursuit of Crippen across the Atlantic

to Canada and his arrest on board the steamship "Montrose," pointing out that Crippen was found with his heavy moustache shaved off and passing under the false name of John Robinson, while his companion, Ethel Le Neve, was found disguised as a boy, with her hair cut, and wearing the brown suit which had been purchased by Crippen's orders on the morning of 9th July when he was preparing for flight. When told by the inspector that he would be arrested for the murder of his wife he at first made no reply, but a little later he said, "I am not sorry; the anxiety has been too much." He was searched, and on him were found two cards, one of which claimed their attention. This was a card which he had obviously had printed for the purpose of disguising himself under a false name. It bore the name of John Robinson and an address at Detroit. On the back was written a message obviously intended by him to be left somewhere for Miss Le Neve. It ran, "I cannot stand the horror I go through every night any longer, and as I see nothing bright ahead and money has come to an end I have made up my mind to jump overboard to-night. I know I have spoiled your life, but I—but I hope some day you can learn to forgive me. With words of love, your H." One other statement the prisoner made at that time counsel called attention to. Inspector Dew handcuffed him, and on explaining that this was necessary on account of the threat that he would jump overboard, Crippen said, "I won't. I am more than satisfied, because the anxiety has been too awful." On being further searched by the chief inspector, he asked, "How is Miss Le Neve?" adding, "It is only fair to say that she knows nothing about it. I never told her anything." The result of the search was that there were found sewn to his undervest four of Belle Elmore's rings and two of her brooches.

On the return voyage on board the "Megantic," Inspector Dew, having his prisoner on what was for his purpose British territory, read to him the warrant. All that Crippen did was to signify that he understood, saying, "Right." On 24th August Crippen made a request to see Miss Le Neve when he was taken off the ship. He said, "I do not know how things will go. They may go all right, or they may go all wrong with me; I may never see her again, and I want to ask you, if you will, to let me see her, but I won't speak to her. She has been my only comfort for the last three years." He did, in fact, see her in the train on the way from Liverpool to London. On four occasions—on the day of his arrest on 31st July, on the day when the warrant was read to him, 21st August, on 27th August when he was charged at Bow Street, and on 21st September, when he was committed for trial—opportunities were given to him to offer any explanation of his flight if he had any to offer, and he did not avail himself of them. Therefore the fact remained that up to this hour Crippen had never offered to any police officer or any magistrate any explanation at all of his flight.

He paused at this moment just to recall to the minds of the jury what the case against Crippen was, resting there. There was on 31st January a motive, as he had explained, to get rid of his wife in order that he might consort with Ethel Le Neve. There was the fact of the total disappearance of Belle Elmore; the fact that Crippen was the only

Mr. Muir

person who professed to be able to account for her disappearance. His first account was admittedly false; his second was followed by immediate flight. The human remains found in the cellar; the pyjama jacket found with them; the remains mutilated by a person possessed of such knowledge and skill as Crippen might be presumed to be possessed of. And if the case rested there, whose could those human remains be but the remains of Belle Elmore and who but Crippen could have put them there?

There was a further piece of evidence which would be placed before the jury. How did Belle Elmore, if it was Belle Elmore, meet her death? How did the person whose human remains were found in the cellar come to die? Examined by a skilled surgeon by post-mortem examination, no cause of death was discoverable in the remains. But the viscera were submitted to Dr. Willcox, the senior scientific analyst to the Home Office, for analysis, and as the result of his tests Dr. Willcox found a quantity of hyoscin, sufficient to show him that there must have been in the body of the person whose remains these were more than half a grain of hyoscin hydrobromide, which was the form in which hyoscin was used for medicinal purposes. The drug was a powerful narcotic poison, but was not commonly prescribed. The form in which it was ordinarily sold for use by medical men was in tabloids, which could be dissolved and used by injection. The official dose was from a two-hundredth to a one-hundredth of a grain. From a quarter to half a grain was a fatal dose. Dr. Willcox found in this body indications that more than a fatal dose of this deadly poison had in some way been taken by the person when alive, and, from the distribution of the poison in the organs, that it had been taken by the mouth, and that the person had lived more than an hour afterwards. There was nothing in the viscera to account for death except hyoscin, and in the opinion of Dr. Willcox the cause of death was hyoscin, administered by the mouth. Hyoscin could be taken in sweetened tea and coffee without its presence being detected.

What was the cause of death in this case? Was it a natural death? It seemed a preposterous question in view of the facts that they now knew. Would the remains have been buried where they were if the person when alive had died a natural death? Was that death the result of a criminal act by some person? Again, that seemed a preposterous question to ask in view of the state of the remains when found. What reason, other than the reason that a criminal desired to remove the evidence of his crime, would account for the state of the remains in which they were found—every bone removed, the head gone, indications of sex excised and taken away? If they were satisfied that the person, whoever it was, whose remains were found in the cellar died from hyoscin poisoning, who administered the drug? Belle Elmore, full of life, and the enjoyment of life, the good of life, was not likely to commit suicide, and if she had done so no one was likely to mutilate her remains. Of this drug not commonly known and not commonly used even by medical men, Crippen, on 17th January, 1910, bought five grains, which were delivered to him on 19th January. He ordered it from Messrs. Lewis & Burrows, a firm of chemists in a large way of business, who in the last three years

Opening Statement for the Crown.

had never had before such a quantity in their possession. Crippen, himself a customer for the preceding ten months, had never before ordered a fraction of a grain of hyoscin hydrobromide from Messrs. Lewis & Burrows. Crippen had to sign the poisons book, and in that he had to state for whom the drug was required and for what purpose. He made false statements in both instances. He said the drug was required for Munyons, which was untrue, because Munyons made no preparations in this country; he also said he wanted it for homœopathic purposes, but the drug hyoscin hydrobromide was not mentioned in the Homœopathic Pharmacopœia. What had become of it? Unless it went into the body of Belle Elmore, and unless the remains were those of Belle Elmore, no explanation was forthcoming at all as to what became of the poison.

He had opened the case in so much detail in order that the jury might be able to appreciate the evidence as it would be given before them piecemeal. While that evidence was being given he asked them, in the in. , of the duty they had to perform, the interests of justice, to keep in their minds these questions—What had become of Belle Elmore? Whose remains were those in that cellar? If they were Belle Elmore's, what explanation of their being found in that place was there, mutilated as they were? Keeping these questions before their minds he thought they would be able to apply the evidence to their verdict when the time came.

Evidence for the Prosecution.

Frederick Lown, examined by Mr. Travers Humphreys—I reside at 12 Ashbrook Road, Highgate. I am the owner of the house, 39 Hilldrop Crescent, Camden Road. I know Crippen the prisoner. I produce exhibit 55, being an agreement in which I let to the prisoner the house, 39 Hilldrop Crescent, on 21st September, 1905, for three years, at a rent of £52 10s. per annum. After three years the tenancy continued from year to year. The agreement is signed "Hawley Harvey Crippen." At the expiration of the agreement the prisoner continued to live in the house. The rent was paid to me very regularly after it was due. On 16th March of this year I went and saw the prisoner at his house, when he told me that he wished to leave the house in three months' time, because he had had property left him in America. He said that he was unable to go to America himself, and his wife was going out to attend to the business for him.

Did he tell you that his wife was going to America, or had gone?—He told me that his wife had gone. I asked for a written notice, and I received the letter (exhibit 56) from the prisoner, on which I endorsed on the back the date when I got it, 22nd March. That letter reads—

Gentlemen,—In accordance with our present agreement, please accept this as a formal quarter's notice that I shall give up my tenancy of Hilldrop Crescent N., on June 24th, 1910. I have to thank you for the many courtesies rendered to me in the past, and I hope that I shall succeed in securing a tenant for you to succeed me as discussed in my conversation with your Mr. Frederick Lown a few days ago. With compliments, I am, faithfully yours,

H. H. Crippen.

The prisoner called upon me at my house afterwards between 17th and 20th June, and arranged with me to stay on in the house until 29th September. On that occasion I asked him how his wife was, and he told me that she was dead. I believe he said she had died in New York, but I cannot say for certain; it was in America.

Cross-examined by Mr. Tobin—The rent was paid regularly. There might be a delay of a week or so in the payment of the quarterly rent, but just the usual time—there was nothing unusual as to time. When I saw the accused in March, 1910, it was in his own house in Hilldrop Crescent. He was alone as far as I knew.

Did he show the least sign of anxiety or agitation?—No, I do not think so; I do not remember.

Any sign of being harassed in any way?—No.

Any indication that he had anything on his mind?—Not as far as I could judge.

The same remarks will apply to the interview you had with him about 17th June?—Well, I could not quite say that. On that occasion, when I asked the accused after his wife's health, when he told me that he certainly seemed to be a little bit——

When he told you that his wife had died he then seemed a bit agitated?—Yes.

I mean as a man might well be if he really cared for his wife and if in truth she had died—that kind of look?—Well, I could not say anything about that.

Can you describe it in any way?—I cannot describe it any further than I have done. I went to Hilldrop Crescent in March casually; he had not written asking me to come.

Dr. John Herbert Burroughs, examined by Mr. Ingleby Oddie—I am a doctor, and live at 169 City Road. I know the accused, and I also knew his wife. I first met him in 1902. He was then living with his wife in Store Street. I knew his wife as Mrs. Crippen, and also by her professional name, Miss Belle Elmore. I believe that she was occasionally appearing at a music hall at that time. I was friendly with both of them, and then I lost sight of them for a time. I think it must have been about 1904 when I met them again. They were still living at Store Street then. I remember their moving to Hilldrop Crescent about 1905. My wife and I visited them there from time to time.

What kind of woman was Mrs. Crippen?—She was a vivacious woman, I should say about thirty years of age, bright and cheerful, a very pleasant woman generally. She was very fond of dress, and dressed very well indeed. At times she wore a quantity of jewellery. As far as I know, she was in the very best of health. She was a stoutish woman.

Did she and her husband seem to be well off at Hilldrop Crescent?—They lived very well; they seemed to lack nothing. I do not think they had a servant, at least never when I was there. They occasionally had a charwoman.

They always seemed to be on good terms?—Oh, yes. As far as I can remember I last saw Mrs. Crippen alive in the beginning of January of

Dr. J. H. Burroughs

this year, at a meeting of the Music Hall Guild. I am the honorary physician to the Guild. I believe the committee meet every Wednesday at Albion House. When I last saw Mrs. Crippen she appeared to be in her usual health. I identify exhibits 28 and 29 as photographs of Mrs. Crippen. The photograph No. 29 was taken very shortly after the annual dinner of the Music Hall Guild in September, 1909. I cannot tell when the other photograph was taken. The photograph No. 29 is a specially good likeness. About eight or nine persons would attend the committee meetings of the Guild on the Wednesday afternoons. I first heard of Mrs. Crippen's death from Mrs. Martinetti in March, and in consequence of what I heard I wrote a letter to the accused, of which exhibit No. 30 is a copy. That letter is dated 7th April, 1910, and it is as follows:—

Dear Peter,—Both Maud and myself were inexpressibly shocked and astounded to learn of poor Belle's death. We hasten to send our very heartfelt condolences on your great loss. As two of her oldest friends, why ever did not you send us a line? Do please give us some details of how and where she died. Maud is very much upset, and so anxious to hear. Only quite casually we heard she had suddenly left for America, and were daily expecting a letter or a card from her. Maud could not understand it, as Belle always wrote her on such important occasions, so could only think Belle wanted to cut all her old friends. And now to learn she is no more. It is all so sudden that one hardly realises the fact. We should so like to send a letter of condolence to her sister, of whom she was so fond, if you would kindly supply her address.—Yours sincerely,

J. H. B.

I knew the accused by the name of "Peter." "Maud" is my wife. The sister to whom I was referring was one of whom Mrs. Crippen was very fond; I believe her name was Tessa, and she lived somewhere in America—in New York, I understood. In reply to that letter I received the letter, exhibit 31, dated 5th April, from Albion House:—

My dear Doctor,—I feel sure you will forgive me for my apparent neglect, but really I have been nearly out of my mind with poor Belle's death so far away. She was not with her sister, but out in California on business for me, and, quite like her disposition, would keep up when she should have been in bed, with the consequence that pleuro-pneumonia terminated fatally. Almost to the last she refused to let me know there was any danger, so that the cable that she had gone came as a most awful shock to me. I fear I have sadly neglected my friends, but pray forgive, and believe me most truly appreciative of your sympathy. Even now I am not fit to talk to my friends, but as soon as I feel I can control myself I will run in on you and Maud one evening. I am, of course, giving up the house, and every night packing things away. With love to both, and again thanking you for your kindness, I am, as ever, yours,

PETER.

That letter is written on ordinary black-edged mourning paper. I have not seen anything of the accused since then, except in Court.

Cross-examined by Mr. HUNTLY JENKINS—I had known Dr. Crippen and his wife for the past eight years and I have seen them off and on for the last six years.

You have had conversations with Dr. Crippen as regards his profession?—I have discussed professional matters at times probably.

Did he tell you that he made a specialty of the ear, the eye, and the nose?—Yes.

And that he had not acted as a general practitioner?—Certainly. He

told me that some considerable time ago, in the early stages of our acquaintanceship.

You had an opportunity of observing his manner towards his wife, had you not?—Yes.

Would you describe him as a kind-hearted, well-mannered man?—He always appeared exceedingly kind-hearted and courteous towards his wife.

Always willing to render her any little service he could?—Certainly.

Would you describe Mrs. Crippen as a well-dressed woman?—Yes, certainly. She was of smart appearance, and always tidily and neatly dressed—at all events outside, not so much indoors, of course. I would call her a smart woman, and a woman of neat appearance.

Have you noticed at times that she was sometimes hasty in her manner towards Dr. Crippen?—Yes, at times, somewhat hasty.

Mrs. Clara Martinetti, examined by Mr. Travers Humphreys—I live at 1 King Edward's Mansions, Shaftesbury Avenue, with my husband, Mr. Paul Martinetti, who is a retired music hall artiste. I first made the acquaintance of Dr. and Mrs. Crippen about eighteen months ago, and from that time I knew Mrs. Crippen as honorary treasurer of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild. I was a member of that Guild, and we had our meetings every Wednesday at Albion House, New Oxford Street. As honorary treasurer Mrs. Crippen always attended.

The Lord Chief Justice—Has Albion House any other connection with the case?

Mr. Travers Humphreys—In fact, the prisoner had his business there as a dentist, as well as Munyons also.

By the Lord Chief Justice—The Guild had one room there in which they met, and for which they paid.

Examination continued—I saw Mrs. Crippen at the meetings every Wednesday. I knew her and her husband pretty well. I used to go and see them at Hilldrop Crescent, and they came to see me and my husband at our flat. The last time I saw Mrs. Crippen was on Monday, 31st January of this year. I saw Mr. Crippen first on that day when he called at my flat between four and five o'clock, and said that Belle would like us to come and have dinner with them that evening. I said that I did not know whether we could go, as my husband Paul had gone to the doctor, and that when he came home from the doctor he felt rather weak, and I did not think he would care to go out afterwards. Mr. Crippen said, in reply to that, "Make him come; it will cheer him up if we have a game of whist afterwards." I did not give any decided answer then, because I had to wait till my husband came home; I expected him home about six o'clock. Mr. Crippen said he would come back, and then he left. My husband came home about six o clock, and I mentioned the invitation to him. Mr. Crippen came back about the same time, and my husband agreed to go, and, in fact, he and I went to 39 Hilldrop Crescent, and had dinner there with Mr. Crippen and his wife. We arrived there about eight o'clock. There were just the four of us there. We had dinner in the room next the kitchen; it is really called the breakfast room, but it is their dining room.

Evidence for Prosecution.

The Lord Chief Justice—Is it on the ground floor or on the basement?

Mr. Travers Humphreys—It is the level of the garden; the other rooms are up a step.

The Lord Chief Justice—The cellar is on the same floor?

Mr. Travers Humphreys—On the same floor.

Examination continued—There was no servant in the house. Mrs. Crippen herself cooked the dinner, and I helped to serve it. After dinner we went upstairs to their parlour, which was above the room which we had just left, and began our game of whist. I helped Mrs. Crippen to clear away the dinner things. We spent the evening playing cards, and we left about half-past one. It was quite a nice evening.

Was there any quarrel of any sort that you saw or heard during the evening?—No, I saw nothing.

Was your husband quite well during the evening or not?—Well, he was not well altogether from the beginning, you see, and then he caught a chill there; he went into a certain room where there was a window open. When we left at 1.30 Mrs. Crippen stood at the top of the steps, and I said "Good-night, Belle," and, of course, kissed her; she wanted to come down the steps with me, but I said, "Don't come down, Belle, you will catch a cold."

All that evening did she seem to be in quite good health?—She seemed so, yes, to me.

And spirits?—She was quite herself.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Just tell us what sort of a lady Mrs. Crippen was? Was she always bright and in good spirits?—Oh, yes. She was very jolly.

Full of spirits, you mean?—Yes, she was nice.

On this evening did she appear to you to be well?—Oh, yes, she was quite well.

Examination continued—I never saw her again after that night. Next day, 1st February, I saw Mr. Crippen about mid-day when he called at our flat, and said, "How is Paul?" I said, "Well, he is not worse, thank God, and he has just gone into a nice sleep; if you don't mind I won't waken him." My husband was then in bed. I said to Mr. Crippen, "How is Belle?" and he said, "Oh, she is all right." I said, "Give her my love," and he said, "Yes, I will." I do not think I saw him again for about a week when he came to see me at my flat. Before I saw him I heard from Miss May that Miss Elmore had left for America. When Mr. Crippen came I said, "Well, you're a nice one; Belle gone to America, and you don't let us know anything about it. Why did you not send us a wire? I would have liked to go to the station and bring some flowers." He said there had not been any time; that late on the Tuesday night they received a cable to say that one of them must go to America, "and as she wanted to go I let her go." He said he had to look out for some papers, and the rest of the night they did the packing. I said, "Packing and crying, I suppose?" He said, "Oh, we have got past that." I said, "Did she take all her clothes with her?" He said, "One basket." I said, "That would not be enough, one basket, to go all that way," or something like that. He said, "She can buy

something more over there." Then I said, "Oh, she is sure to send me a postcard from the ship." I do not know what he said in reply to that, but I think he nodded his head. He then left me. He called again about a week afterwards, and I said to him that Belle had never sent me a postcard, adding, "I suppose she will write when she gets to New York; I suppose she will write from New York." He said, "Oh, she does not touch New York; she goes straight on to California." I again saw him some days after that, and I asked him if he had heard from Belle, but he said "No." I asked him if he was going to the ball of the Music Hall Ladies' Benevolent Fund, and he said that he did not think so. I said, "If you want to go, Paul can get you the tickets from the club; they are half a guinea each," and he replied, "All right, I will take two." I attended the ball, which I think was held on 20th February. Mr. Crippen was there, and Miss Le Neve, his lady typist, was along with him. A lady came up to me, and after she had spoken to me I looked at Miss Le Neve and noticed that she was wearing a brooch very similar to the brooch exhibit 11, which is now shown to me.

The Lord Chief Justice—It is a sort of star, gentlemen, with apparent brilliants.

Examination continued—When you saw her wearing that brooch, or one like it, did you recognise it as one that you had seen anybody else wear?—Well, I only thought Belle Elmore—I only thought that Mrs. Crippen wore it, but I am not sure. After the ball Mr. Crippen called again at my flat, and I asked him if he had not heard yet from Belle. He said, "Yes, and I cannot make it out; I have a letter from my relations to say that she is very ill, and had something the matter with one of her lungs. At the same time I also got a letter from Belle to say that I must not worry, she is not as bad as they say." I do not remember how long that was after the ball. The next thing I heard from the accused was by the letter exhibit No. 32, dated Sunday, 20th March. That letter is as follows:—

Dear Clara and Paul,—Please forgive me not running in during the week, but I have really been so upset by very bad news from Belle that I did not feel equal to talking about anything, and now I have just a cable saying she is so dangerously ill with double pleuro-pneumonia that I am considering if I had not better go over at once. I do not want to worry you with my troubles, but I felt I must explain why I had not been to see you. I will try and run in during the week and have a chat. Hope both of you are well. With love and best wishes.—Yours sincerely,

Peter.

I saw the accused again on the Wednesday before Easter, 23rd March, after our Guild meeting. Mrs. Eugene Stratton and I came downstairs and met Mr. Crippen at the big door at the entrance. Mr. Crippen said that he had a cable to say that Belle was very dangerously ill, and he expected another every minute to say that she was gone. Then he said if anything should happen to Belle he would go to France for a week, that he wanted some change of air. I got a telegram next morning, Thursday, from Victoria Station—"Belle died yesterday at six o'clock. Please 'phone to Annie. Shall be away a week. Peter." "Annie" is Mrs. Stratton. Peter is the name I knew the accused by. I saw him

on the Wednesday after Easter, 30th March. Mrs. Smythson and I went to his office at Albion House and offered our condolence. We asked him where his wife had died, and he said in Los Angelos with his relations. I asked if he would give us the address, because the Guild wanted to send a letter of sympathy and an everlasting wreath, and he said that it was not necessary to do so, that his relations did not know what the Guild meant. I said, "Oh, yes, we have to do that, we would like to do it," and then he said, "I will give you my son's address." He gave his son's address to Mrs. Smythson, but I do not remember what it was. I said, "Was your son with her when she died?" and he said, "Yes." We did not have any more conversation then. He called at our flat some time after that—I cannot say on what day. I said something about Belle's funeral, and he said, "Oh, she is not going to be buried; she is going to be cremated, and I am going to have the ashes sent over."

After you heard from Mr. Crippen of his wife's death did you ever go up to the house at Hilldrop Crescent?—Yes, I went there along with Mrs. Stratton and her nephew. Mrs. Stratton's nephew knocked at the door. We were in a taxi-cab, and Mr. Crippen came down and spoke to us there. We asked him what boat Belle left by, and he mentioned some name which I do not remember. It was something like "La Tourenne" or "La Touvee."[1]

Do you remember whether, when you saw him at any other times, he told you anything more about his wife, or have you told us all?—I think that is all. I have seen Mrs. Crippen in furs; I know I have seen her in two sets of furs She had fox furs. (Shown exhibit 18)—That is a fox fur muff. I hav[illegible] Mrs. Crippen with a muff very similar to that. When she wore the [illegible] she also had the fox furs round her neck. (Shown exhibit 15)—That is like the cape part of the set of fox furs.

After Mrs. Crippen disappeared did you see anybody else wearing a set exactly like that?—I have seen Miss Le Neve. I only saw Miss Le Neve wearing such a set on one occasion, I do not remember when, but it was after I had heard of Belle Elmore's death.

Mr. Tobin—There will not be any dispute at all as to Miss Le Neve wearing the jewellery and furs that once belonged to Mrs. Crippen. I say that in order to save time.

The Lord Chief Justice—I am much obliged to you, Mr. Tobin.

Examination continued—In the summer of 1909 Mrs. Crippen stayed with me in my bungalow that I had on the river. When she was staying with me I saw part of her body when she was dressing or undressing, and I noticed a mark on the lower part of her stomach. It was right in the middle, and it looked to me to be the mark of an old cut. It seemed to be a little darker than the rest of the skin. It would be about 6 inches long, I think.

Cross-examined by Mr. Tobin—I saw her navel. I knew Mr. and Mrs. Crippen for about eighteen months. Mr. Crippen came often enough to my flat where my husband and I were, and Mrs. Crippen also came with her husband. My husband and I often enough went to their

[1] "La Touraine," probably.—Ed.

house in Hilldrop Crescent. We were on very friendly terms with them, and we liked them both.

You had many opportunities no doubt of judging Dr. Crippen's characteristics as regards his being a kind-hearted man apparently?—Yes.

And did you form the opinion from what you saw of him and heard him say and the way he acted, that he was a kind-hearted man apparently?—Yes.

You liked him and you liked his wife?—Yes.

And your husband did, too?—Yes.

Did he seem a good-tempered man always?—He seemed so.

Take the dining party on the Monday, 31st January. It was a happy party as you have told us—a pleasant party?—Yes.

Everything seemed natural about it—everybody talked naturally?—Yes.

You did not notice any indication of Dr. Crippen's manner being different from usual?—I did not notice anything—I have not noticed it.

You never thought so at the time?—I have not noticed it.

It struck you, did it not, that Dr. Crippen's manner was just the same as usual at that dinner party?—Yes.

Happy, talking and all that kind of thing?—Yes. During that evening my husband, who had been unwell and in the doctor's hands, had occasion to go to the lavatory after dinner. He went out of the room by himself. Next day, about noon, Dr. Crippen came to my flat by himself.

Was his manner then just the same as it had been during the eighteen months that you had known him?—Yes.

You did not think it was at all odd that Dr. Crippen should call on you to ask after your husband, who had been in the doctor's hands?—No.

You thought it was quite a natural thing for the doctor to do?—Yes.

And when he came and asked after your husband on the next day at noon, the 1st February, did his manner seem just the same as it had always been?—Yes, it did to me.

No sign of anxiety or fright or agitation?—No. I have not noticed anything.

You did not notice anything of that kind?—No.

About a week later he came to your flat, did he not, and you said to him, "You're a nice one; why did you not tell me that your wife was going off to America"?—Yes.

He came to your flat on several occasions between the dinner party on 31st January and the Easter time?—Yes.

On none of those occasions did you ever notice any sign of his being agitated, upset, or frightened?—No.

From the fact that he came to your flat on several occasions between the dinner party and the Easter time he never showed, I suppose, any desire to avoid you or your husband?—It did not look like it.

In fact, you yourself rather pressed him a little to go to the ball on 20th February, did you not?—I asked him if he would go—I think I said, "Are you going?" and then I said, "If you want to go, the tickets are half a guinea each."

That was a place where he knew it would be quite likely that Miss

Le Neve, if she went with him, would meet a great many of Mrs. Crippen's friends, because it was the Guild ball?—Yes.

And that piece of jewellery which the jury have seen was worn quite openly, I suppose, upon the bodice of her dress?—Yes.

Did his manner at the ball seem just the same as usual?—To me it was the same. I never saw Mrs. Crippen doing her hair at my bungalow. She told me that she dyed her hair, that she used some stuff to bleach it a little, to make it lighter. I would say that her hair when she dyed it was fair.

Auburn?—Yes, it might be auburn, a kind of gold coloured. Her own natural hair was darker.

Was her own hair dark brown?—I cannot say about it being dark brown; I know it was darker. She was very particular about dressing up her hair. I have noticed when her hair was a little untidy from taking her hat off that it was darker at the roots.

Looking at the photograph, apparently she did not wear a fringe?—She wore her hair thrown over like this (indicating). It is like when a lady brushes her hair down and then you throw it over, you see, and leave it with a puff—you see.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I had seen Miss Le Neve in the office before the ball. I might have heard her name before the ball. I always called her the typist, and when I saw her at the ball I recognised her as the typist. When I saw the scar on Mrs. Crippen's body she was wearing a dressing-gown or something like that. I had never seen this mark before, and when I saw it I did not speak to her about it. It caught my eye as being what might be called a substantial mark of something like 6 inches long, like a long cut. I said to her, "Oh Belle, does that sometimes hurt you?" and she put her two hands to it, and said "No."

Mrs. Louise Smythson, examined by Mr. Travers Humphreys—I live at 38 Plaistow Road, Brixton Hill. I knew Mr. and Mrs. Crippen for about fifteen months I should think. I am a member of the committee of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild. I attended a meeting of the committee on Wednesday, 26th January. Mrs. Crippen was present and seemed to be in her perfect health and spirits. I attended the dinner and ball of the Music Hall Benevolent Fund on 20th February. I saw Mr. Crippen there along with Miss Le Neve, his typist. I knew her as his typist. She was wearing a brooch similar to exhibit 11.

Mr. Tobin—I do not dispute that it was Mrs. Crippen's brooch that she was wearing.

Examination continued—In the course of the evening I spoke to Mr. Crippen and asked if he had heard from his wife lately, and then I asked for her address.

By the Lord Chief Justice—When I asked if he had heard from his wife lately, he said, "Oh yes," and then when I asked for her address he said she was right up in the wilds of the mountains of California.

Examination continued—I then said to him, "When you get to hear of her will you let us know?" and he said, "Yes, when she has a settled

address I will let you know." Some time afterwards he gave me the address of his son. (Shown exhibit 50)—I identify that as a page from *The Era* of 26th March, and I see an advertisement there in the column under the heading of "Deaths," the advertisement being—"Elmore, March 23rd. In California, U.S.A., Miss Belle Elmore (Mrs. H. H. Crippen)." After seeing that—about 30th March—I went to Mr. Crippen's office along with Mrs. Martinetti. We offered him our sympathy, and asked him if he would kindly give us the address where his wife died. He told us it was quite unnecessary as she was now dead; none of her friends in America knew of the Ladies' Guild, and so he thought it was quite unnecessary to give us the address. We then said we were very anxious to send some little token if he would let us know where she was to be buried. He said that was also unnecessary, as they thought of having her cremated, and the ashes would be brought here, and we could have a little ceremony here. Mrs. Martinetti then spoke to him for a few minutes, and I again asked him for the address. He said, "I will give you the address of my son," and he wrote it in pencil and gave it to me. (Shown exhibit 37)—That is what he gave me, and it bears "H. O. Crippen, 1427 N. Hoover Street, Rural Delivery, Los Angelos, California." I wrote a letter and a postcard to that address. On 24th May, during my absence from the Guild, Miss May received a letter. While we were talking to Mr. Crippen on 30th March he told us that his son was present when Mrs. Crippen died. We asked that particularly. I saw Mr. Crippen again on Wednesday, 18th May, I think it was, in a shop in Tottenham Court Road. Miss Le Neve was with him. When she saw us she left him, and went out of the shop. I went over and asked him if he had heard anything more about his wife's funeral, and he said, "Yes, it is all over, and I have her ashes at home."

Cross-examined by Mr. Roome—I saw Dr. Crippen and Mrs. Crippen together about eight times.

Would you agree that Dr. Crippen seemed always a good-tempered, kind-hearted man?—Yes, he always seemed so.

Mrs. Teresa Hunn, examined by Mr. Muir—I am known as "Tessie." I am the sister of Belle Elmore; she was older than me. Her maiden name was Cora Mackamotzki, and at home she was known as Cora. The first time I saw the accused was when he came to my father's house with my sister about 1892 or 1893. My sister showed me a wedding card, but the accused was not with her when she showed me it. He was with her when she spoke to me about his having married her. She introduced him to my father and mother as her husband.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I had not seen him before.

Examination continued—According to the wedding card which was shown to me they were married on 1st September, 1892. They came soon after that to us, and then they left. We were living at Long Island, and my sister went to New York, and then to Philadelphia. She came back to New York a few months after her marriage, and stopped at New York, and from there she came to our house. At that time I saw a scar on her stomach; it was not all healed, it was fresh. I saw that scar again seven years ago; it was healed much better then than it was the

first time I saw it. It would be about 4 or 5 inches long and about 1 inch wide, but I could not quite exactly say. It was more a cream colour than the rest of her skin, and paler looking. The outside, near the flesh, was paler than the centre of the scar. I remember on 15th April of this year my half-sister, Mrs. Mills, getting a letter from Dr. Crippen. (Shown letter exhibit No. 71)—My half-sister brought that letter to my home. It is from 39 Hilldrop Crescent, N. London, England, and it is written on black-edged paper. It is as follows:—

My Dear Louise and Robert,—I hardly know how to write to you of my dreadful loss. The shock to me has been so dreadful that I am hardly able to control myself. My poor Cora is gone, and, to make the shock to me more dreadful, I did not even see her at the last. A few weeks ago we had news that an old relative of mine in California was dying, and, to secure important property for ourselves, it was necessary for one of us to go and put the matter into a lawyer's hands at once. As I was very busy, Cora proposed she should go, and as it was necessary for some one to be there at once, she would go straight through from here to California without stopping at all and then return by way of Brooklyn, and she would be able to pay all of you a long visit. Unfortunately, on the way my poor Cora caught a severe cold, and not having while travelling taken proper care of herself, it has settled on her lungs, later to develop into pleuro-pneumonia. She wished not to frighten me, so kept writing not to worry about her and it was only a slight matter, and the next I heard by cable was that she was dangerously ill, and two days later after I cabled to know should I go to her I had the dreadful news that she had passed away. Imagine if you can the dreadful shock to me—never more to see my Cora alive nor hear her voice again. She is being sent back to me, and I shall soon have what is left of her here. Of course, I am giving up the house; in fact, it drives me mad to be in it alone, and I will sell out everything in a few days. I do not know what I shall do, but probably find some business to take me travelling for a few months until I can recover from the shock a little, but as soon as I have a settled address again I will write again to you. As it is so terrible to me to have to write this dreadful news, will you please tell all the others of our loss. Love to all. Write soon again, and give you my address probably next in France.

From Doctor.

The envelope is postmarked "London, W.C., 10.30 a.m., 7th April, 10," and it is addressed to "Mrs. Robert Mills, c/o Mr. F. Mackamotzki, Green Street, West Avenue, Brooklyn, New York." Mr. Mackamotzki is my stepfather. I did not see that letter at my father's house before my sister brought it to my home.

Cross-examined by Mr. Tobin—I am a full sister of Belle Elmore. My father's name was Mackamotzki.

By the Lord Chief Justice—My mother was twice married.

Cross-examination continued—Mackamotzki was my sister's maiden name. My father was a Pole.

By the Lord Chief Justice—The second time I saw the scar it was more healed than the first time. I cannot exactly say whether it was a scar resulting from an operation or not, but I know it was a scar.

Bruce Miller, examined by Mr. Muir—I am a real estate agent, and live at East Chicago, Indiana, U.S.A. I was formerly engaged in the music hall profession, and I came to England to follow that profession. While I was in England I made the acquaintance of Belle Elmore. I first met her some time in the month of December, 1899. I saw her for the last time about the first part of April in 1904. I saw her then at 37 Store Street, London. I am living in East Chicago now with my wife

and child, and have been there for the past four years. I was travelling when I first went there, but I have been with my wife ever since.

Has there been any proposition at all that Belle Elmore should come out to you?—Never, I never heard of such a thing.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I never saw Belle Elmore again after April, 1904, but I have had communication with her. She would write to me about three or four times a year perhaps—always on Christmas, New Year, and my birthday. She wrote me good wishes and that sort of thing.

Cross-examined by Mr. Tobin—I have been a real estate agent since December, 1906. I became an estate agent because I was tired of the show business, and I saw a chance of making a little more money. I was not a failure on the music hall stage. I first met Mrs. Crippen at a house in Torrington Square, London, in December, 1899. Her husband was in America at that time, so far as I understood. I do not know how long it was after I was first introduced to Mrs. Crippen that her husband, Dr. Crippen, came back from America; it would be some time during the spring, about the time of the opening of the Paris Exposition. I visited Mrs. Crippen very often at the house where she was living during her husband's absence. I think her house was in a street called Guildford Street, but I could not say for certain. I could not say how much of the house she had, because I was only in the one front room. I would visit her two or three times a week sometimes, and then sometimes I would not see her for a week or two weeks or about three weeks. I visited her sometimes in the afternoons and sometimes in the evenings. When I first met her I was on my way to Paris for the Paris Exposition. I was in Paris for about eight or twelve weeks, and I was there about the time Dr. Crippen came back from America.

During a period of four or five months when Dr. Crippen was in America, were you engaged in London on the music hall stage?—I was not playing on the stage at that time.

Were you earning money?—No. I was in a sort of partnership with a friend of mine, and he was furnishing the money for the attractions at that time, and had arranged for the Paris Exposition and some Paris people—I do not know who they were, they were French people—who were managing the attractions at the other end; it was a sort of partnership affair. While I was in Paris I wrote to Mrs. Crippen, but not very frequently—often enough to be sociable, to be friends. I was not writing her on business; I was writing her in friendship.

Were you writing to her as a lover?—No.

Were you fond of her?—Yes.

Did you ever tell her that you loved her?—Well, I do not know that I ever put it in that way.

Did you indicate to her that you did love her?—She always understood it that way, I suppose.

Then you did love her, I presume?—I do not mean to say that. I did not exactly love her; I thought a great deal of her as far as friendship was concerned. She was a married lady, and we will let it end at that. It was a platonic friendship.

I rather gathered from the answers you gave me that you communi-

cated to her in some way that you did love her?—A little present once in a while or something of that kind.

Do you know the difference between friendship and love?—Yes.

Were you more than a friend?—I could not be more than a friend. She was a married lady and I was a married man.

Were you more than a friend, sir?—I could not be more than a friend—I was not.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Answer the question whether you were or were not?—I was not more than a friend.

Were there any improper relations between you and her?—No.

Cross-examination continued—Did you ever write love letters to her?—I have written to her very nice letters perhaps.

You know what a love letter is. Did you ever write a love letter to her?—Well, I do not remember that I ever put it just in that way. I often wrote to her very friendly letters; I might say they were affectionate letters.

Then you wrote affectionate letters to her. Did you write love letters to her?—Affectionate letters.

Ending "Love and kisses to Brown Eyes"?—I have done so.

Now, sir, do you think those are proper letters to write to a married woman?—Under the circumstances, yes.

What circumstances?—Because Dr. Crippen always knew all about it. I could not say whether it was from France that I wrote those letters, as it is a long time ago.

You told the jury that the introduction was in December, 1899, and that Dr. Crippen returned from America about May, 1900?—Yes.

During that period you were part of the time in London and about twelve weeks in Paris?—Yes.

I understand you wrote letters to her of this kind when you were away?—Yes, about that time.

Why did you say then, her husband being in America, that he knew all about it?—I did not say when he knew about it. He knew about it when he came back.

You do not suggest he knew about it at the time you were writing them?—That I do not know. When he came back from America he knew all about it.

Do you agree now that those letters were most improper letters to write to a married woman during her husband's absence?—I do not think they were, under the circumstances.

Were you her lover, sir?—I was not.

Have you been to any house in London with her for the purpose of illicit relationship?—I have not.

Bloomsbury Street?—No place.

Have you ever kissed her?—I have.

Never done anything more than kiss her?—That is all.

Why did you stop at that?—Because I always treated her as a gentleman, and never went any further. I last wrote to Mrs. Crippen some time after Easter Sunday of the present year. I addressed my letter to 39 Hilldrop Crescent. I did not get any answer. I also wrote to her about 5th January of this year.

Was that an affectionate letter?—I do not remember. I think it was very short, because I had not heard from her previous to that—only just a card. I cannot be positive about that, it being quite a while ago. I was writing letters to her during the year 1909.

Were those affectionate letters—"Love and kisses to Brown Eyes," and that kind of thing?—They may have been. Sometimes I wrote to her that way, and sometimes I did not.

You are still very fond of her?—I should be if she were here. We have always been friends, and I should not stop now. She wrote letters back to me.

Were her letters couched in the same kind of terms as your letters to her?—Perhaps not quite so endearing.

But still they were sufficiently endearing?—They were friendly; they were generally very short, and they were letters that my wife has read. They did not contain endearing terms somewhat similar to those that I used when writing to her.

Never?—Never.

Did she encourage your attentions?—My attentions were not of the kind you are perhaps speaking of.

I call it attentions when you write "Love and kisses to Brown Eyes." Did she discourage those expressions in your letters?—She did not, because they were not expressed as you want to interpret them.

Did she ever write back saying that she did not like such expressions?—She never did; she did not say anything about it in her letters.

Re-examined by Mr. Muir—How was it you came first to make Belle Elmore's acquaintance?—In December, 1899, a friend of mine—a music teacher—and I were occupying apartments in Torrington Square. Belle Elmore was dining with my friend one evening, and he introduced me to her. I merely shook hands with her and went away. I visited her at 37 Store Street, and later on in Guildford Street during the time her husband was in London. I gave her several of my photographs. One of the photographs now shown to me was set on a piano in her husband's house. I do not know where the other photograph that is now shown to me was hanging There were other two large photographs, which were hanging in her parlour at the time when I left and while her husband was in London.

Were your relations with her, whatever they may have been, intended to be kept secret from her husband?—Not at all.

Were they in any way improper relations?—No, sir.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I must put a question to you because we are dealing with a woman who is supposed to be dead. I wish to ask you definitely this: were there any improper relations between you and Mrs. Crippen?—There never were.

You were an affectionate friend, I understand?—Yes, I was.

How often did you see her husband and herself during the four years from May, 1900, up till April, 1904?—I never met her husband. During the past two years I do not think I saw her more than perhaps six times.

What I do not quite understand is this, why did you say to Mr. Tobin that her husband knew that you were going there if you never saw him?—For the simple reason that I always went there when I felt like

Mrs. H. H. Crippen (Miss Belle Elmore).

going to call on her; I never thought anything about it. I never tried to avoid Dr. Crippen in any manner, shape, or form, and there were several occasions that I had reason to believe Dr. Crippen was in the house. In fact, I would always have been glad at any time to meet him when I should happen to call at the house. I cannot remember exactly when I gave Belle Elmore those photographs that have been shown to me, but I think it was during the last year of our acquaintance. The larger photographs were given to her just a short time before I went to America. I went to America about the 21st of April, 1904. From 1901 to 1903 I was living in Clapham with some friends.

Mr. Muir—This gentleman has come over from America specially to give evidence, leaving his business and his family. Can he go back now?

The Lord Chief Justice—If Mr. Tobin has no objection.

Mr. Tobin—No, my lord.

The Lord Chief Justice—Then he can go.

Melinda May, examined by Mr. Ingleby Oddie—I am the secretary of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild, and I live at 5 White Gardens, Clapham Road. I knew Mrs. Crippen; she was the asurer of the Guild for about two years, and she attended every Wednesday afternoon. I last saw her alive at the meeting on Wednesday, 26th January. She was then in her usual health. As regards her spirits, she was quite bright, and she was in her usual spirits when I saw her. I have known the prisoner for over two years. I visited at their house, 39 Hilldrop Crescent. There was a meeting of the Guild held on Wednesday, 2nd February, which I expected Mrs. Crippen to attend, but she did not come. Miss Le Neve came to the door at ten minutes to one with a pass book, a paying-in book, a cheque book, a letter to myself, and a letter to the committee. Exhibit 33 is the letter addressed to me that was brought by Miss Le Neve. It is as follows:—

39 Hilldrop Crescent, February 2nd.

Dear Miss May,

Illness of a near relative has called me to America on only a few hours' notice, so I must ask you to bring my resignation as treasurer before the meeting to-day, so that a new treasurer can be elected at once. You will appreciate my haste when I tell you that I have not been to bed all night packing, and getting ready to go. I shall hope to see you again a few months later, but cannot spare a moment to call on you before I go. I wish you everything nice till I return to London again. Now, good-bye, with love hastily,

Yours, Belle Elmore, p.p. H. H. C.

I knew Mrs. Crippen's writing, but I could not say in whose writing that letter is in. Exhibit 34 is the letter that was addressed to the committee of the Guild. It is as follows:—

39 Hilldrop Crescent, London, N.

To the Committee of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild.

Dear Friends,—Please forgive me a hasty letter and any inconvenience I may cause you, but I have just had news of the illness of a near relative and at only a few hours' notice I am obliged to go to America. Under the circumstances

Melinda May

I cannot return for several months, and therefore beg you to accept this as a formal letter resigning from this date my hon. treasurership of the M.H.L.G. I am enclosing the cheque book and deposit book for the immediate use of my successor, and to save any delay I beg to suggest that you vote to suspend the usual rules of election and elect to-day a new honorary treasurer. I hope some months later to be with you again, and in meantime wish the Guild every success and ask my good friends and pals to accept my sincere and loving wishes for their own personal welfare.

Believe me, your faithfully,

BELLE ELMORE.

That letter is not in Mrs. Crippen's handwriting. A fresh treasurer for the Guild was elected that afternoon. I remember speaking to Dr. Crippen about 17th February regarding his wife's subscription. I spoke to him in the corridor at Albion House. I told him that Miss Elmore's subscription became due on 17th February, and I asked him to let me have her address so that I could write to her. He said that she was away up in the hills in California—right up in the mountains—and that if I would hand him the letter he would forward it to her, and no doubt she would authorise him to pay the guinea. I wrote a letter and left it in his office, so that he could redirect it to her. I saw Dr. Crippen several times during the following month of March. I remember seeing him on Wednesday, 23rd March, when he told me that Mrs. Crippen was ill—very ill indeed—and he was waiting for worse news.

I have seen Mrs. Crippen wearing jewellery. (Shown exhibits 10, 11, and 12)—These pieces of jewellery are exactly like those I have seen her wear often. (Shown marquise ring, exhibit 22)—There was one very often on her hand exactly like this. (Shown pair of earrings, exhibit 23)—She had a pair exactly like this. (Shown diamond brooch, exhibit 25)—I have seen one like this often on her bodice. (Shown rings, exhibits 26 A to F)—I recognise one of these rings, which has a stone out. I remember on 10th March we were selling programmes in aid of the St. Saviour's Hospital Charity, and she told me that she had lost a stone out of her ring. (Shown gold watch, exhibit 35, and brooch, exhibit 36)—I recognise these also. (Shown exhibits 13, 16, and 20)—I have seen Mrs. Crippen wear furs exactly like these. The size of gloves that she wore was 6¾.

Cross-examined by Mr. HUNTLY JENKINS—The handwriting of the two letters which have been shown to me is not in the least like that of Mrs. Crippen. (Shown exhibits 44, 45, and 46, being jars containing hair)—I was shown those jars by Sergeant Mitchell, who asked me if I knew whose hair was in the jars, was it like Miss Elmore's, and I said. "No." Two were darker than her hair as I knew her, and one was rather like it.

Two had not the slightest resemblance?—Two of them, I said, I did not recognise, because they were darker than hers, but the other one was rather like it—the fair one. I had been told that they came from Hilldrop Crescent.

Re-examined by Mr. MUIR—I was shown these jars by Sergeant Mitchell and another gentleman. I do not remember the date, but I think it was the Thursday previous to Mr. Mitchell going to America.

Mrs. EMILY JACKSON, examined by Mr. MUIR—I am the wife of Robert Jackson. In 1908 I was living at 80 Constantine Road, Hampstead. A

Evidence for Prosecution.

Mrs. Emily Jackson

young woman called Ethel Le Neve came to stay with me as a lodger in September of that year, and she stayed on to March, 1909. During that period she slept every night at home. She then went away, and came back to my house in August, 1909. She finally left me on 12th March of this year. On some occasions in February she slept away from home; she stayed away one night, and then she would sleep at home, and then she would stay away two nights, and then she finally slept away from home altogether. I cannot exactly say when she began to sleep away altogether.

Did she ever sleep out at night before the time you are speaking of in February of this year?—Occasionally at her sister's—so she told me. In January or February—the early part of February, as far as I can remember—I noticed that she was wearing jewellery that she had not been wearing before. (Shown ring with four diamonds and ruby, exhibit 10)—I saw her wearing a ring exactly like that. (Shown brooch, exhibit 11)—I saw her wearing a brooch like that, a sort of star brooch, but I do not know whether it was the same. I saw her wearing a watch. (Shown watch, exhibit 25)—I do not think I have seen that one before. The watch she was wearing was a gold one—chased I think. I saw her wear on the wedding-ring finger a plain gold band, like a gentleman's plain ring; I should not call it a wedding ring. (Shown brown fur coat, exhibit 69)—Miss Le Neve gave me that coat early in February. Exhibit 70 is a list of the clothes that she gave me. It begins with the short, brown fur coat which I have just spoken to, and then the list contains the following articles, "1 black feathe. boa; a long crea..n coat; a long brown coat; a long black coat; a black voile blouse and skirt; a grey and black striped coat and skirt; mole coat and skirt; black facings; a yellow underskirt; black underskirt; black skirt length, accordion pleated; heliotrope costume length; white lace blouse; blue and white silk and lace blouse; two back hair combs; heart-shaped locket, blue stones; a lizard brooch, green and white stones; three new nightgowns; two brown hats; two old black blouses; four pairs of brown stockings; two pairs of blue, one pair of black, one pair of black and white, one pair of pink, one pair of white, and one pair of pink shoes." She gave me all those articles at different times during February and March. Before that she had only given me a few odd things of her own—nothing much to speak of. I remember on one occasion when Miss Le Neve and Dr. Crippen brought in a cab some things in a dress basket. I visited Miss Le Neve at Hilldrop Crescent once before she finally left me on 12th March, and twice after that date. Miss Le Neve was there by herself the first time; Miss Le Neve and the French maid were there the second time; and Miss Le Neve, Dr. Crippen, and the French maid were there on the third occasion. I cannot remember when I saw her for the last time, but it was the night before Mr. Dew paid his first visit to Hilldrop Crescent.

Cross-examined by Mr. Rooms—I was very friendly with Miss Le Neve. Before she finally left my house on 12th March she lived away from the house from time to time.

By the Lord Chief Justice—After the middle of February, or after early in February?—After early in February she slept away from my house.

Cross-examination continued—I have seen Dr. Crippen a good many times.

Do you agree that he was a good-tempered and kind-hearted man?—He always gave me that impression.

I think you said at the Police Court that you thought he was one of the nicest men you ever met?—I did.

FREDERICK PEDGRIFT, examined by Mr. INGLEBY ODDIE—I am the manager of *The Era* Newspaper Company. In consequence of a letter which came to the office on 24th March of this year we inserted an advertisement in the column of *The Era* headed "Deaths." That letter has been destroyed. I produce a page of our newspaper of 26th March containing the advertisement. Along with the letter there was a postal order for 10s. Our charge for inserting the advertisement was 1s. 6d., and we returned the balance of 8s. 6d. to Dr. Crippen, which he acknowledged by the letter, exhibit 51.

The LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—After that I think we may take it that the advertisement was inserted on Dr. Crippen's behalf.

Mr. TOBIN—Certainly, my lord.

ERNEST WILLIAM STUART, examined by Mr. TRAVERS HUMPHREYS—I am manager to Messrs. Attenboroughs, pawnbrokers, 142 Oxford Street. (Shown marquise diamond ring, exhibit 22, and pair of diamond earrings, exhibit 33)—These articles of jewellery were brought to me on 2nd February, last year, by a person whom I believe to be the prisoner. He asked me for a loan upon the articles, and I agreed to lend £80 on them. He then, in my presence, signed the contract note (exhibit 24), "H. H. Crippen, 39 Hilldrop Crescent." On 9th February the same man came back again and brought the diamond brooch (exhibit 25) and six diamond rings (exhibit 26). I advanced £115 upon those articles, and he signed the contract note (exhibit 27), "H. H. Crippen," in my presence. I do not remember whether I paid the money in notes or gold, but we generally pay in notes. We do not pay by cheque unless it is specially asked for. Our bankers are the London County and Westminster Bank, the Oxford Street branch.

Cross-examined by Mr. HUNTLY JENKINS—I did not know Dr. Crippen before these transactions, but I have heard that he was quite well known at our shop.

He was known both by name and by address?—Yes, I think so. He has not had articles of jewellery pawned at our place in the past, but he has had articles repaired. He may have pawned things on other occasions, but I personally do not know about it. When the police came to our shop there was no difficulty in giving Dr. Crippen's name and address.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—I should think that the diamond ring and the pair of earrings might be worth £100. The articles on which we advanced the £115 would be worth about £130 in the ordinary way.

CHARLES JOHN WILLIAMS, clerk in the Bank of England, produced exhibit 52, Bank of England note, No. 52688, issued to the London County and Westminster Bank on 4th February, 1910. On the back of the note there is the name "M. L. Curnow."

Evidence for Prosecution.

Frederick Hayles

FREDERICK HAYLES, cashier at the Berners Street Branch of the London County and Westminster Bank, identified the Bank of England note, No. 52688, as having been issued by his bank to Messrs. Attenboroughs on 9th February, 1910.

MARION LOUISA CURNOW, examined by Mr. MUIR—I am manageress to "Munyon's Remedies," who have an office at Albion House, Oxford Street. For some time before November, 1909, Dr. Crippen was manager, and afterwards, between November, 1909, and 31st January, 1910, he was agent on commission. His salary ceased in November, and he was afterwards paid commission. On 1st February, when I became manageress, his connection with Munyon's ceased. I knew Mrs. Crippen slightly; when she came into the office I generally spoke to her. I first heard of her being away from London about the end of February. I asked Dr. Crippen if she was away, and he said, "Yes, she has gone for a trip to America." He did not give me any reason for her going. I first heard it said at Easter time that she was dead. I asked Dr. Crippen if he had enjoyed his holiday—he had been away during the Eastertide—and he said, "As well as he could under the circumstances." I asked him if it was true that Mrs. Crippen was dead, and he bowed his head. Ethel Le Neve was employed with the Yale Tooth Specialists, in the same building. I do not know where she was at Easter time. (Shown Bank of England note, exhibit 52)—I got that note changed for Dr. Crippen on 9th February. In the beginning of March I put two envelopes in my safe for Dr. Crippen. One of them had "Dr. Crippen" on it, and the other one had "Dr. Crippen, personal." He asked me if I would mind it for him. On 8th July Dr. Crippen asked me if any one knew I had anything of his in the safe, and I said no. He then said, "If any one should ask you, know nothing," or "say nothing"—I am not sure which—"and if anything happens to me please give what you have there to Miss Le Neve," and I answered "All right." This would be about half-past four in the afternoon. The envelopes were opened by me on Monday, 11th July. In one of the envelopes I found nine deposit notes with the Charing Cross Bank for £600, and I also found some insurance receipts. Four of these are receipts from "Miss Belle Elmore," amounting to £300 on various dates from September, 1906, to March, 1909, and three are for £10, £250, and £10, in the names of "Miss B. Elmore" and "H. H. Crippen." In the second envelope I found some jewellery, which I recognise as the watch and brooch (exhibits 35 and 36). At our meeting on 9th July Dr. Crippen asked me to let him know what he owed me, and he settled up with me. Roughly, he was owing me about £5 for some advertisements that I put in for him during the week. (Shown exhibit 61)—That is a cheque on the Charing Cross Bank for £37, bearing the signatures of Crippen and Elmore, and dated 9th July. Dr. Crippen filled that cheque in in my presence. It already had Belle Elmore's signature upon it. He asked me to cash the cheque for him, and he showed me the pass book to show that there was £37 and some few shillings at the bank. I cashed the cheque for him.

The LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—Is Miss Elmore's signature believed to be her genuine signature or not?

Mr. MUIR—Yes, as far as we know.

Examination continued—Munyon's do not make any of their remedies in this country, nor do they purchase any drugs in this country. All their remedies are imported ready from America. On 19th January of this year I was simply working with Dr. Crippen, looking after Munyon's books. I do not know anything about the purchase of hyoscin on 19th January.

Was any cash paid out from Munyon's or any entry made in Munyon's books of such a purchase?—No. (Shown letters, exhibits 33, 34, and 71)—I recognise the handwriting there as that of Dr. Crippen.

Cross-examined by Mr. TOBIN—The handwriting is not in any way disguised. One of the letters is signed "Belle Elmore, per H. H. C." I have known Dr. Crippen for about twelve years. When I first met him he was general manager at Munyon's. I was also employed there at the same time. I have known him regularly ever since, and have been in contact with him endless times.

Have you always formed the opinion that he was a kind-hearted and amiable man?—Oh, yes.

He was in the habit, was he not, of compounding medicines that had to go by post?—Yes, as far as I know.

He compounded scores of special prescriptions?—Yes.

You do not yourself know whether, for those special prescriptions, he had or had not to buy drugs from chemists?—No, I do not know about that.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—That was for something other than Munyon's?—I had nothing to do with that; that was his own private business.

Cross-examination continued—Apart from his duties as manager for Munyon's, he to my knowledge made up prescriptions for patients. He had a room of his own at Albion House; it would be what one might call his own private room, and he was generally in that room alone. I do not know what he kept, or what he had in that room. I do not think there was a cupboard there, but I am not certain. I am not aware that he ever had any general practice as a medical man. I knew that he was a specialist for the eye, throat, and nose. I am aware that after he ceased to be agent for Munyon's on 1st February of this year he continued to compound prescriptions as he had done before for patients, but I do not know whether or not he had to buy drugs for that purpose. After he ceased to be agent for Munyon's on 1st February he still came to Albion House in connection with the tooth specialist business; he used to come in almost every morning and see me. The room in which he carried on the tooth specialist business in Albion House was on the same floor as Munyon's, but quite distinct. Dr. Crippen ceased to be manager in November, 1909, and acted as agent on commission from then until 1st February, 1910. During those three months from November to January, I was still working with Dr. Crippen. I had practically no definite position—we used to work together really. I became manageress on 1st February. After that Dr. Crippen used to come and see me very often in the mornings.

Evidence for Prosecution.

Marion L. Curnow

Are you pretty confident that he came and saw you on the morning of 1st February?—I cannot remember his not coming.

During the rest of that week, and the following fortnight, did he come regularly every day?—Yes.

Did you notice any signs whatever of agitation or terror on his face?——No, I cannot say that I did.

Were his manner and conversation just the same as they always had been?—Yes.

No frightened or hunted look about him?—No.

Nothing that you observed unusual?—No.

Re-examined—Although Dr. Crippen was a specialist for the eye, ear, throat, nose, and teeth, he had patients for other things.

As a general practitioner, do you mean?—Yes, practically; he could give them anything for whatever their disease was.

Gilbert Mervin Rylance, examined by Mr. Muir—I carry on business as a surgeon dentist under my own name at Albion House. I met Dr. Crippen for the first time about the middle of 1907. In 1908 I started the business of "The Yale Tooth Specialists" at Albion House, and Dr. Crippen became my partner. About March of this year I entered into a fresh agreement with him. I have not got the agreement here; the police have a copy. Dr. Crippen agreed to put £200 into the business, and I was to put in my experience, knowledge, and skill. We were each to have half profits. I remember seeing Mrs. Crippen about 26th January of this year. I heard from Dr. Crippen about 1st or 2nd February that she had left. He asked me if I did not notice that he was lonely, that his wife was half-way across to America, that she had gone over on legal business, to settle up estates on account of his mother's death, I think it was.

When did you hear it said that Mrs. Crippen was dead?—A lady came to my place about 24th March, the Thursday before Good Friday, with a telegram. Dr. Crippen was then at Dieppe along with Miss Le Neve. He had told me himself a few days before Easter that Miss Le Neve and her aunt were going over with him. When he came back I asked him about his wife, and he told me that she was dead, but that he did not send me a telegram so as not to spoil my holiday. On Saturday, 9th July, I got to business about eleven o'clock. I saw Dr. Crippen, but he did not say anything to me at all. I should say that I saw him for the last time that day, between twelve and one o'clock. I waited till two o'clock for him to come back, and then I could not wait any longer. I did not see him again until I saw him at Bow Street Police Office. (Shown letter exhibit 66)—That letter, which is written on my own headed paper, reached me on the Monday morning. It is dated 9th July, 1910, and it is as follows:—

Dear Dr. Rylance,

I now find that in order to escape trouble I shall be obliged to absent myself for a time. I believe with the business as it is now going you will run on all right so far as money matters go. Plucknett's last account you will find in my desk. As to rent, you have only to send Goddard & Smith £10 12s. 6d., as I have already paid them £30 off £40 12s. 6d. (this is in advance

up to Sept. 25). If you want to give notice you should give six months' notice in my name on Sept. 25th, 1910. Long knows pretty much all of the business, and can take over the book-keeping. There will be several paid bills to enter on my file in my desk, the key to which you will find in the upper drawer of the little cabinet in Coulthard's office. I shall write you later on more fully. With kind wishes for your success.—Yours sincerely,

H. H. Crippen.

P.S.—I am enclosing Plucknett's account, which you can attend to for yourself personally.

That letter is in Dr. Crippen's handwriting. I kept on the business in my own name. I had seen Chief Inspector Dew at the office on the previous day, 8th July. I asked Dr. Crippen who he was, and he said that he was a Scotland Yard officer who had come to find out if Mrs. Crippen had any estates to pay taxes on. After 1st February I saw Dr. Crippen in the company of Miss Le Neve. Mrs. Crippen's death was announced as having taken place on 23rd March—two days before Good Friday—and about a fortnight or so later he told me that he had married Miss Le Neve.

Cross-examined by Mr. Huntly Jenkins—Did you know that Dr. Crippen was making up private prescriptions?—Yes, I knew he made up private prescriptions, but I did not know for whom.

William Long, examined by Mr. Muir—I am a dental mechanic. I have known Dr. Crippen since 1886. I have been in various businesses with him. I first knew Ethel Le Neve about 1901 or 1902. At that time she was a typist in the employment of the Drouet Institute. Dr. Crippen was looking after that business as the consulting specialist. I have been in the same employment as Dr. Crippen ever since, off and on, and, as far as I know, Ethel Le Neve has also been in the same employment. Dr. Crippen's usual time for coming to the office was about ten or half-past ten. On 9th July he was in the office when I arrived there between quarter-past nine and half-past nine. I asked him if there was any trouble, and he said, "Only a little scandal." He gave no further explanation. He gave me a list of clothes which he sent me out to buy for him. I bought a brown tweed suit.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Were you to buy them for a man or a woman, or what?—A boy.

Examination continued—(Shown exhibit 67)—That is the suit that I bought, as far as I can say. I also bought a brown felt hat, two shirts, two collars, a tie, and a pair of boots. These were all for a boy. The size of the felt hat was 6⅝ths. I thought it would be for the same person, but I did not know. I took these things to the back room of the Yale Tooth Specialists on the third floor—room No. 91—and I left them there. There was nobody there when I left. The room is shut up on Saturday. I saw Ethel Le Neve about eleven o'clock that morning. She was wearing a hat, but I could not describe it. I saw her again about half-past eleven. I did not see her any more that day. I should say that I last saw Dr. Crippen that day about one o'clock. I did not know that he was going to leave. (Shown exhibits 68 and 68a)—I

William Long

got that letter on the evening of Saturday, 9th July. It is on the Rylance Dental Specialists' paper, and is as follows:—

Dear Mr. Long,—Will you do me the very great favour of winding up as best you can my household affairs. There is £12 10s. due to my landlord for the past quarter's rent, and there will be also this quarter's rent, a total due to him of £25, in lieu of which he can seize the contents of the house. I cannot manage about the girl. She will have to get back to France, but should have sufficient saved from her wages to do this. After the girl leaves, kindly send the keys with a note explaining to the landlord; address Messrs. Lown & Sons, 12 Ashbrook Road, St. John's Villas, Holloway. Thanking you in anticipation of fulfilling my wishes, I am, with best wishes for your future success and happiness, yours faithfully,

H. H. Crippen.

I went to 39 Hilldrop Crescent that evening; the key had come in the letter. I did not take possession of any of the things that were there. My wife pawned some of the things on the Monday afternoon. The police came there on the Monday. My wife went round to Hilldrop Crescent on the Monday to give the French maid some food, and I went round in the evening. I saw my wife pick up a piece of paper, which I identify as exhibit 41—"Mackamotzki. Will Belle Elmore communicate with H. H. C. or authorities at once. Serious trouble through your absence. 25 dollars reward to any one communicating her whereabout to (blank)." That paper, which is in Dr. Crippen's handwriting, was found in the sitting-room. On the same day, 11th July, I found at Albion House the hat which I had seen Miss Le Neve wear. I also found a suit of clothes belonging to Dr. Crippen.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I could not say whether it was the same hat that Miss Le Neve had on the Saturday.

Examination continued—I found the French maid in possession of the house when I got there. The police sent her back to France. Between 1st February and that date I on two occasions moved some things in a van from Hilldrop Crescent to Albion House. Amongst other things there was a wooden box. (Shown ermine jacket, exhibit 57, and white fur, exhibit 58.) I found these in a wooden box after Dr. Crippen had gone away. They were taken possession of by Inspector Dew. About two months before Dr. Crippen went away he gave me some of his own clothing, and also some theatrical women's clothing, and feminine vests and stockings.

Cross-examined by Mr. Tobin—I have known Dr. Crippen since about 1896 or 1897, and I have worked with him more or less since.

You, like the other witnesses, remember that he was a kind-hearted and amiable man as far as you could see from his outward manner?—I have always found him so. I could not say whether he had any general practice during the time I was with him, but I knew that he used to make up special prescriptions. He would have to buy the drugs for those prescriptions. He used to buy bottles, which he kept in a cupboard or cabinet in the room that was used as the office after he joined Dr. Rylance. During the period up to November, 1909, when he was manager for Munyon's, he used to prescribe for patients, making up drugs and posting them off. During that period he would be likely to have bottles, but I could not say where he kept them. During the period between November,

1909, and 1st February, 1910, he used similarly to prescribe for patients, and he would be likely to have bottles. These bottles were kept in the office of the Yale Tooth Specialists, where he used to make up the prescriptions.

Take the critical time, which is early in February of this year; used he during that time to come daily to his work just the same as usual? Did he ever omit a single day as far as you remember?—No.

Did he come at the regular times?—Yes.

Did he ever show any trace of uneasiness?—No.

Any worried appearance about him?—No.

No hunted or worried appearance or anything of that kind—nothing unusual about his manner?—Nothing whatever.

And diligent in his work as before?—Yes.

No trace of abruptness as if he had got anything on his mind?—Not the slightest. He was just as kind as ever.

And talking as freely and in the same way as he always did, without constraint or restraint?—Yes.

Re-examined—Miss Le Neve was the book-keeper in the business that Dr. Crippen carried on.

Edgar Brett, examined by Mr. Travers Humphreys—I am the assistant manager of the Charing Cross Bank, 128 Bedford Street, Strand. A current account was opened at our bank on 30th September, 1903, in the joint names of Belle Elmore and H. H. Crippen, Store Street, Tottenham Court Road. They had to sign cheques jointly. Exhibit 60 is a certified copy of the account as from September, 1909. The state of the account on 31st January, 1910, was £2 7s. 8d. debtor. On the next day, 1st February, that was increased to £2 13s. 11d., and then on that day there was paid in in cash £17 13s. 9d. On 3rd February £40 in cash was paid in, and from that time right to the end of the account the account remained in credit. On 30th June there was a credit balance of £37 19s. 4d., which continued until 11th July. On the 11th July we honoured a cheque for £37 drawn on that account, that cheque being the exhibit which has been produced. There was also a deposit account opened at our bank on 15th March, 1906, in the joint names of Belle Elmore and H. H. Crippen. £250 was paid in to the credit of that account on that date. Exhibit 74 is a certified copy of that deposit account. So far as that payment in of £250 in the joint names of Belle Elmore and H. H. Crippen is concerned, it could be drawn out by either of those persons, but only with the authority of the other person. We would require to have a notice of withdrawal signed by both persons. On 20th November, 1906, £50 was put on deposit in the name of Belle Elmore. Other sums were put on deposit in the name of Belle Elmore, the last being £15, on 24th March, 1909, amounting to £330. That, along with the £270 in the two names, made £600, which was subject to twelve months notice of withdrawal. It bore interest at 7 per cent. We got a notice of withdrawal of the whole amount, dated 15th December, 1909, and signed by Belle Elmore only. We accepted that, notwithstanding that part of the account was in the two names.

Edgar Brett

If the notice had expired would you have paid it over without the signature of Dr. Crippen?—Yes, I think so. The notice of withdrawal of the whole £600 would expire on 15th December next. Dr. Crippen has not attempted to draw out any of that money or to raise any loan.

Cross-examined by Mr. Tobin—I know from my experience that it is quite a common practice where husbands and wives have a joint account for the wife to sign blank cheques and the husband to put in the amount and sign it himself. When the money was paid into the deposit account the bank stamped a piece of paper showing that it was payable to either, or to the survivor. With a deposit account at 7 per cent. there must always be twelve months' notice of withdrawal. That notice will do if it is signed by either party, and at the end of the twelve months the money would be paid by our bank upon the receipt of either. Mrs. Crippen gave notice of withdrawal on 15th December. The money could not be payable to any one until 15th December, 1910. Mrs. Crippen herself sometimes paid money into the joint deposit account. I believe Dr. Crippen sometimes came and paid money into the Belle Elmore deposit account. There were six payments into the single account and four into the joint account. Four of the payments are signed by Belle Elmore alone, and the other two bear H. H. Crippen's name. As regards the 7 per cent. interest payable on both the joint account and the Belle Elmore account, Dr. Crippen signed a good many of the receipts for interest.

That means, I suppose, that he came for the interest and signed the receipt?—Yes, the interest on both the accounts was handed to him. We had a verbal authority from the wife to do that. All the cheques on the current account were signed by both parties.

The Court then adjourned.

Second Day—Wednesday, 19th October, 1910.

Walter Dew, examined by Mr. Travers Humphreys—I am chief inspector of New Scotland Yard. On 30th June a Mr. Nash came to Scotland Yard and made a statement in consequence of which I made inquiries, between 30th June and 8th July, with reference to the disappearance of Mrs. Crippen. On 8th July I went with Sergeant Mitchell to 39 Hilldrop Crescent, and was admitted by a French servant. After a few minutes I saw Miss Le Neve. At that time she was wearing the brooch, exhibit 11. I did not see anybody else at Hilldrop Crescent. I had a conversation with Miss Le Neve, and then I went with her to Albion House, where I saw the prisoner Crippen. Miss Le Neve brought him down to see me on the stairs. He was a stranger to me up to that time. He was then wearing a rather heavy moustache. He took me upstairs to a room, and then I said to him—"I am Chief Inspector Dew, of Scotland Yard, and this is Sergeant Mitchell. Some of your wife's friends have been to us concerning the stories you have told them about her

death, with which they are not satisfied. I have made exhaustive inquiries, and I am not satisfied, so I have come to see you to ask if you care to offer any explanation." He said, "I suppose I had better tell the truth." I said, "Yes, I think that would be best." He said, "The stories I have told them about her death are untrue. As far as I know, she is still alive." I said, "Any explanation you desire to make shall be written down in your own words, and perhaps it would be more convenient if you told me all about yourself." He expressed his willingness to do so, and he then made a statement which Sergeant Mitchell wrote down. That statement (exhibit 39) was read over to him and he signed it and initialled each page.

Mr. Travers Humphreys read the following statement:—"Albion House, 61 New Oxford Street, 8th July, 1910. Hawley Harvey Crippen states:—I am forty-eight years of age. After being questioned by Chief Inspector Dew as to the statements made by me that my wife, known as Belle Elmore, is dead, I desire to make a voluntary statement to clear the whole matter up.

"I was born at Cold Water, Michigan, U.S.A., in the year 1862, my father's name being Myron Augustus Crippen, a dry goods merchant. My mother's name was Andresse Crippen, *nee* Skinner.

"My mother is now dead, but my father lives at Los Angeles, Cal.

"I was educated first at Cold Water, Indiana, and California, and then attended the University at Michigan until I was about twenty, and finished my education at the Hospital College at Cleveland, where I took the degree of M.D.

"I came over to England in 1883, and attended various hospitals to see the operations, and returned to the States, and was assistant for three or four months to Dr. Porter, of Detroit. After that I went to New York and took a degree in special eye and ear work at the Ophthalmic Hospital. This would be in 1885.

"After then I returned to Detroit, where I remained about two years as assistant to the same doctor. I then went to San Diego, where I practised as an eye and ear specialist for about two years. Before going to this place I was married to a lady named Charlotte Bell, of New York, and she accompanied me to San Diego.

"We then came to New York. I have had only one child by my first wife. He was born at San Diego about 1887 or 1888, and his name is Otto Hawley Crippen. He is now married and lives at Los Angeles.

"My first wife died, so far as I can remember, in 1890 or 1891. We were living at Salt Lake City, where I was practising as an eye and ear specialist. She was buried at Salt Lake in my name.

"After this my son went to live with his grandmother, my mother, until she died. I then went to New York, and went as an assistant to Dr. Jeffery, of Brooklyn, and I lived with him.

"About 1893, while with Dr. Jeffery, I met Belle Elmore, who was being attended by him. Her name at that time was Cora Turner. I forget where she was living, but she was living alone. She was only about seventeen years of age, and I, of course, was about thirty.

Evidence for Prosecution.

Statement by Accused

"She, at this time, was living under the protection of a man named C. C. Lincoln, a stove manufacturer, of Water Street, New York. She had been living with him, but he had given up his house and had taken a room for her and was paying all her expenses.

"I took her to several places for some weeks, as I was very fond of her, and one day she told me Lincoln wanted her to go away with 'im. I told her I could not stand that, and would marry her right away, and a few days after this I married her at a minister's house at Jersey City. I forget his name and the name of the street.

"I had been married to her some little time when [illegible] me her name was not Turner, but Kunigunde Mackamotzki. She [illegible] had been married twice, and her name then was Marsin[illegible] living in Brooklyn. Her mother had been dead some y[illegible] me her father was a Russian Pole and her mother was [illegible]

"Her stepfather, so far as I know, is still living, [illegible] Avenue, Brooklyn.

"Her parents were in rather ordinary circumstances, [illegible] good education, and spoke German well.

"After getting married to her we went to St. Louis, [illegible] as consulting physician to an optician in, I think, Olive Street. His name was Hirsch, I think.

"We stayed there about a year, and we returned to New York, where I took a position as consulting physician to the Munyon Company. We lived in the office at East Fourteenth Street.

"I was in New York for only a few months when the company transferred me to Philadelphia. I was there with my wife about a year, and was then transferred to the firm's place at Toronto, where I managed their business. I forget where I lived, but we were there only six months, and then returned to Philadelphia.

"I was there some time, and while there, about 1899, my wife, who had a good voice, went to New York to have her voice trained, as she thought of going in for grand opera.

"I paid all her expenses, and occasionally visited her at New York, and then in about 1900 I came to England alone, where I was manager for Munyon's at their offices in Shaftesbury Avenue, and I lived at Queen's Road, St. John's Wood.

"It was in April I came over, and she joined me in August, as she wrote and told me she was giving up her lessons in grand opera, and was going in for music hall sketches. To this I objected, and told her to come over here. She came, and we went to live at South Crescent.

"When she came to England she decided to give sketches on the music hall stage, and adopted the name of "Macamotzki," but she did not make anything at it. She gave a sketch at the Old Marylebone Music Hall, but it was a failure, and she gave it up.

"After this she did not do anything in it for two or three years, until I had to go to America about two years after coming here. My firm sent for me, and I became manager in Philadelphia.

"When I left England my wife and I were living at, I think, 62 Guildford Street, and she remained there while I was away. I remained

in Philadelphia from November till the following June, and sent my wife money regularly.

"When I returned I found she had been singing at smoking concerts for payment, and that an American music hall artiste, named Bruce Miller, had been a frequent visitor at her house.

"She told me that this man visited her, had taken her about, and was very fond of her, also she was fond of him.

"I may say that when she came to England from America her manner towards me was entirely changed, and she had cultivated a most ungovernable temper, and seemed to think I was not good enough for her, and boasted of the men of good position travelling on the boat who had made a fuss of her, and, indeed, some of these visited her at South Crescent, but I do not know their names.

"I never saw the man Bruce Miller, but he used to call when I was out, and used to take her out in the evenings.

"When I returned to this country, I did not take up my position at Munyon's, but went as manager to the 'Sovereign Remedy Company,' 13 Newman Street.

"They failed about eight months afterwards, and I then went as physician to the Drouet Institute, Regent's Park, and afterwards at 10 Marble Arch, and they also failed.

"From there I took a position with the Aural Clinic Company, 102 New Oxford Street, where I remained until they failed in about six months.

"I then went back to Munyon's, 272 Oxford Circus, as manager and advertising manager.

"I removed to Albion House as manager about eighteen months ago, after which I took it on as an agency, but, as it did not pay, I, in February last, handed it over to the company again, but for the last two years I had been running the Yale Tooth Specialist Company, with Dr. Rylance as partner, and am still doing so.

"I ran what I termed the Imperial Press Agency, in connection with Munyon's, because by so doing I got their advertisements inserted at a reduction.

"At the present time I am interested in an ear-cure business, called the 'Aural Remedy,' at Craven House, Kingsway, and I work at an address in Vine Street.

"I did not think anything of Bruce Miller's visiting my wife at the time.

"After returning from America we went to live at 34 Store Street for about a year. During this time she adopted the stage name of 'Belle Elmore,' although she had had it in her mind when she came over, but I persuaded her to use the other name.

"She got an engagement at the Town Hall, Teddington, to sing, and then from time to time she got engagements at music halls. She went to the Oxford as a comedienne, and was there about a week.

"She also went to the Camberwell, and also at a hall at Balham. She also sang at the Empire, Northampton, and various towns.

"She would probably go away for about two weeks and return for about six weeks, but used to earn very little.

Evidence for Prosecution.

Statement by Accused

"We remained at 34 Store Street for some time, and went to 37 same street for about two years, and about five years ago, in, I think, 1905, removed to 39 Hilldrop Crescent, for which I pay £50 a year.

"It is quite four years since she ever went out at all to sing, and, although we apparently lived very happily together, as a matter of fact there were very frequent occasions when she got into most violent tempers, and often threatened she would leave me, saying she had a man she could go to, and she would end it all.

"I have seen letters from Bruce to her, which ended 'with love and kisses to Brown Eyes.'

"About four years ago, in consequence of these frequent outbursts, I discontinued sleeping with her, and have never cohabited with her since.

"She did all the housework herself, with the exception of having a charwoman in occasionally.

"About two years ago she became honorary treasurer of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild, and was here every Wednesday.

"I never interfered with her movements in any way; she went in and out just as she liked, and did what she liked; it was of no interest to me.

"As I say, she frequently threatened to leave me, and said that if she did she would go right out of my life, and I should never see or hear from her again.

"On the Monday night, the day before I wrote the letter to the Guild resigning her position as treasurer, Mr. and Mrs. Paul Martinetti came to our place to dinner, and during the evening Mr. Martinetti wanted to go to the lavatory. As he had been to our house several times, I did not take the trouble to go and show him where it was. After they had left my wife blamed me for not taking him to the lavatory, and abused me, and said, 'This is the finish of it. I won't stand it any longer. I shall leave you to-morrow, and you will never hear of me again.'

"She had said this so often that I did not take much notice of it, but she did say one thing which she had never said before, viz., that I was to arrange to cover up any scandal with our mutual friends and the Guild the best way I could.

"Before this she had told me frequently that the man she would go to was better able to support her than I was.

"I came to business the next morning, and when I went home between five and six p.m. I found she had gone.

"I realised that she had gone, and I sat down to think it over as to how to cover up her absence without any scandal.

"I think the same night, or the next morning (Wednesday) I wrote a letter to the Guild saying she had gone away, which I also told several people.

"I afterwards realised that this would not be a sufficient explanation for her not coming back, and later on I told people that she was ill with bronchitis and pneumonia, and afterwards I told them she was dead from this ailment.

"I told them she died in California, but I have no recollection of telling any one exactly where she died.

"Some one afterwards asked me where my son lived, and I told them,

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

Statement by Accused

"I then put an advertisement in the *Era* that she was dead, as I thought this would prevent people asking a lot of questions.

"Whatever I have said to other people in regard to her death is absolutely wrong, and I am giving this as an explanation.

"So far as I know, she did not die, but is still alive.

"It is not true that she went away on legal business for me, or to see any relations in America.

"I did not receive any cables to say that she was ill, and it is not true that she was cremated at San Francisco, and that the ashes were sent to me, or that she sailed from Havre.

"So far as I know, she has no claim to any title.[1]

"I have no recollection of telling any one my son was with her when she died.

"We had a joint account at the Charing Cross Bank, subject to the signature of either, but it pleased her to think she was signing cheques, and she also did so, and several blank cheques were always already signed by her, and some of them have been changed by me since her departure, and there is one here now (produced).

"When my wife went away I cannot say if she took anything with her or not, but I believe there is a theatrical travelling basket missing, and she might have taken this with some clothes.

"She took some of her jewellery, I know, with her, but she left four rings behind—three single stone (or solitaire) diamonds, and one of four diamonds and a ruby, also a diamond brooch.

"She had other jewellery, and must have taken that with her.

"I have never pawned or sold anything belonging to her before or after she left.

"Everything I have told you is true.

"I do not know what clothes, if any, she took away; she had plenty.

"Whenever we quarrelled, and she threatened to leave me, she told me she wanted nothing from me.

"I have bought all her jewellery, and, so far as I know, she never had any jewellery presents, and I do not know that she ever had any money sent her, except that Bruce Miller used to send her small amounts on her birthday and at Easter and Christmas, to purchase a present.

"She suffered from bilious attacks, and I have given her medicine for that—homœopathic remedies.

"It is true that I was at the Benevolent Fund dinner at the Criterion with Miss Le Neve, and she wore the brooch my wife left behind. She has also worn my wife's furs.

"Miss Le Neve has been in my employ, and known to me through being employed by the firms I have worked for, for the past eight years, and she is now living with me as my wife at Hilldrop Crescent. I have been intimate with her during the past three years, and have frequently stayed with her at hotels, but was never from home at nights.

"After I told people my wife was dead Miss Le Neve and I went to Dieppe for about five days, and stayed at a hotel there (I forget the name,

[1] Presumably Crippen meant "claim to any title-deeds or estate."—Ed.

but the proprietor's name was Vacher) in the names of Mr. and Mrs. Crippen.

"My belief is that my wife has gone to Chicago to join Bruce Miller, whose business on the music hall stage is a musical instrument turn, but I think he has now gone into another business, and has speculated and made money. Mr. Didcot was his agent when he was over here.

"I shall, of course, do all I can to get in touch with her, so as to clear this matter up.

"She has a sister named Louise, whose name is Mills, living with her husband, who is a soapmaker living at Brooklyn. They live with my wife's stepfather, Mr. Haraanger.

"I do not know where any of her other relations live.

"I cannot tell you how you can find or trace her, except as I have already said.

"I will willingly go to my house with you to see if I can find any letters which may throw any light on the matter, and I invite you to look round the house, and do whatever you like in the house.

"This is all I can tell you.

"Any notes that I have changed through any one in this building were in connection with my business.

"This statement has been read over to me. It is quite correct, and has been made by me quite voluntarily, and without any promise or threat having been held out to me.

"(Sgd.) HAWLEY HARVEY CRIPPEN.

"(Sgd.) WALTER DEW, Chief Inspector, *Witness.*
"(,,) ARTHUR MITCHELL, *Witness.*"

Examination of Mr. Dew continued—I was engaged some hours taking the statement, from about twelve noon till about six in the afternoon. I then called Miss Le Neve in, and she was with me for a time while Crippen was out of the room. After a short time I saw Crippen again, and went with him, Miss Le Neve, and Sergeant Mitchell to 39 Hilldrop Crescent. Crippen quite readily agreed to come with me. He showed me into every room in the house, and I also looked round the garden. There were some things packed up in one of the rooms, and he said that they were about to remove. He told me that his wife did not keep a servant, and to save herself trouble she had locked up the two bedrooms on the first floor, and that he occupied the one on the top and she the one next to him. There are two rooms in the basement, quite level with the garden; these would be the breakfast room and the kitchen. On that floor there is a coal cellar under the front-door steps. Then on the first floor, at the top of the steps, there are two sitting rooms. Above these there was the front bedroom, and then behind that was a bed and sitting room. Those are the rooms which Crippen told me were kept shut up. Above that again there were three small bedrooms, one at the front and two at the back of the house, bathroom, and the ordinary offices. After going over the house I went into the breakfast room, the room next to the kitchen, and I asked Crippen if he would show me the jewellery his wife had left behind. He

said, "With pleasure," and he went away, and then came back bringing exhibits 7, 8, 9, 10, and 11. I said to him, "Of course I shall have to find Mrs. Crippen to clear this matter up." He said, "Yes, I will do everything I can. Can you suggest anything? Would an advertisement be any good?" I said that I thought that was an excellent idea. He said he would insert it in various American newspapers, and together we composed an advertisement. Exhibit 41 is the draft advertisement in Crippen's handwriting—"Mackamotzki. Will Belle Elmore communicate with H. H. C. or authorities at once. Serious trouble through your absence. Twenty-five dollars reward to any one communicating her whereabouts to ——." I left that draft advertisement with Crippen. I left him somewhere about eight o'clock that evening. Next day, Saturday, the 9th July, I circulated a full description of Mrs. Crippen as being a missing person. I sent that description to every police office in London, and I made various inquiries. I did not tell Crippen about that. I continued my inquiries on Sunday, the 10th, and I went through and considered the statement that had been made. On Monday, the 11th, I went to Albion House, but I did not succeed in seeing Crippen or Miss Le Neve. I ascertained that he was not in the house at the time. I saw the two witnesses, Mr. Rylance and Mr. Long, and they showed me the two letters which they have produced. Not finding Crippen at Albion House, I went on to Hilldrop Crescent, on the same Monday, and I made a careful search of the house. Long came to the house after me, and while I was searching the house he handed me the draft advertisement, exhibit 41. I dug up portions of the garden, and I also examined the coal cellar. On that day I circulated a description of the prisoner Crippen and of Miss Le Neve, and I continued my inquiries. I forwarded the description to various ports in England and abroad. On Tuesday, 12th July, I made a further examination of the house, and also on the 13th, when, amongst other things, I again searched the coal cellar. The coal cellar had a brick floor. There was a very small quantity of coal there, and also a little rubbish, cuttings from small branches of trees, an old chandelier, and such things as that. I went down with Mitchell on to my knees, and probed about with a small poker which I had got out of the kitchen.[1] I found that the poker went in somewhat easily between the crevices of the bricks, and I managed to get one or two up, and then several others came up pretty easily. I then produced a spade from the garden and dug the clay that was immediately underneath the bricks. After digging down to about a depth of four spadefuls I came across what appeared to be human remains. After digging further, I sent for Dr. Marshall, the divisional surgeon of police in that district, and Sir Melville Macnaghten, the chief of the Criminal Investigation Department. Dr. Marshall came between five and six o'clock, and he saw a portion that I had unearthed. After I had procured assistance, we dug further, and Dr. Marshall came back later on. We left the remains where they were that night, without moving them; we covered them up, locked up the house, and left it in charge of two police officers.

On the next day, the 14th, Dr. Marshall again attended, along with Mr. Pepper. Under their instructions the remains were removed from the

[1] See Introduction.

METROPOLITAN POLICE

MURDER

AND MUTILATION.

Portraits, Description and Specimen of Handwriting of HAWLEY HARVEY CRIPPEN, alias Peter Crippen, alias Franckel; and ETHEL CLARA LE NEVE, alias Mrs. Crippen, and Neave.

Wanted for the Murder of CORA CRIPPEN, otherwise Belle Elmore; Kunigunde Mackamotzki; Martinez and Turner, on, or about, 2nd February last.

Description of Crippen. Age 50, height 5 ft. 3 or 4 complexion fresh, hair light brown, inclined sandy, scanty, bald on top, rather long scanty moustache, somewhat straggly, eyes grey, bridge of nose rather flat, false teeth, medium build, throws his feet outwards when walking. May be clean shaven or wearing a beard and gold rimmed spectacles, and may possibly assume a wig.

Sometimes wears a jacket suit, and at other times frock coat and silk hat. May be dressed in a brown jacket suit, brown hat and stand up collar (size 15).

Somewhat slovenly appearance, wears his hat rather at back of head.

Very plausible and quiet spoken, remarkably cool and collected demeanour.

Speaks French and probably German. Carries Firearms.

An American citizen, and by profession a Doctor.

Has lived in New York, Philadelphia, St. Louis, Detroit, Michigan, Coldwater, and other parts of America.

May obtain a position as assistant to a doctor or eye specialist, or may practise as an eye specialist Dentist, or open a business for the treatment of deafness, advertising freely.

Has represented Munyon's Remedies, in various cities in America.

Description of Le Neve alias Neave.—A shorthand writer and typist, age 27, height 5 ft. 5, complexion pale, hair light brown (may dye same), large grey or blue eyes, good teeth, nice looking, rather long straight nose (Greek shape), medium build, pleasant, lady-like appearance. Quiet, subdued manner talks quietly, looks intently when in conversation. A native of London.

Dresses well, but quietly, and may wear a blue serge costume (coat reaching to hips) trimmed heavy braid, about 1 inch wide, round edge, over shoulders and pockets. Three large braid buttons down front, about size of a florin, three small ones on each pocket, two on each cuff, several rows of stitching round bottom of skirt; or a light grey shadow-stripe costume, same style as above, but trimmed grey moire silk instead of braid, and two rows of silk round bottom of skirt; or a white princess robe with gold sequins; or a mole coloured striped costume with black moire silk collar; or a dark vigurrow cloth costume, trimmed black velvet collar or a light heliotrope dress.

May have in her possession and endeavour to dispose of some—a round gold brooch, with points radiating six ways from centre, each point about an inch long, diamond in centre, each point set brilliants, the brooch is all being slightly larger than a half-crown; and two single stone diamond rings, and a diamond and sapphire (or ruby) ring, stones rather large.

Absconded 9th inst, and may have left, or will endeavour to leave the country.

Please cause every enquiry at Shipping Offices, Hotels, and other likely places and cause ships to be watched.

Information to be given to the Metropolitan Police Office, New Scotland Yard, London S.W., or at any Police Station.

Metropolitan Police Office,
New Scotland Yard 16th July 1910

E. R. HENRY,
The Commissioner of Police of the Metropolis

Reproduction of Police Bill.

cellar and put into a coffin and removed to the mortuary. In addition to the remains which we put into the coffin there were some articles which we put into a tray, one of these articles being a Hinde's curler. From that time, the 14th July, the remains were in charge of the doctors, so far as I know. I made some measurements of the cellar, at the request of Mr. Pepper. The distance from the surface of the brick floor to the upper portion of the remains was 8 inches; the depth of the brick was 3 inches, so that there was 5 inches of earth or clay. The bricks had been laid on the flat. Some of the remains were lower than others; the distance from the upper surface of the brick to these would be 12 inches. All the remains were found within a depth of 12 inches, including the brick—within 9 inches of earth.

When I was searching the house on the 14th I found a large quantity of ladies' clothes. In addition to the clothes which I found in the wardrobes and in the chest of drawers I found three baskets and one large trunk full of clothes. I also saw a quantity of furs, which I afterwards removed. There was a box underneath the bed in the first floor front bedroom. In that box I found two suits of pyjamas and one odd pair of pyjama trousers. Exhibit 48 is the odd pair of trousers. I did not find any jacket to correspond with those trousers, although I looked for it. The two suits and the odd trousers were made of the same sort of material, but not quite the same pattern. The pair of trousers was what might be called a single pattern—the only one of that pattern. I also found exhibit 43, which is in Latin, and is a diploma of the Hospital College of Cleveland, Ohio. On the back I found the following endorsements:—

Presented and Registered in the Office of the Clerk of the County of King's by Hawley H. Crippen, as his authority to practice physic and surgery, this 8th day of July, 1900. Wm. J. Kaisu, Clerk (King's County Seal). Registered also in New York County—P. Joseph Scully, Clerk of the City and County of New York. Bowling Green, N.Y. This will certify that the within diploma is from a reputable Medical College legally chartered under the laws of the State of Ohio. Given under my hand this December 3rd, 1892. J. N. M., M.D., Secretary, State Board of Health. Philadelphia, Pa., March 22nd, 1893. This diploma having been found to be a genuine document issued by a legally chartered college, is endorsed by order of the faculty of the Medical College of Philadelphia. A. R. Thomas, M.D., Dean.

It also certifies that Hawley Harvey Crippen is of good moral conduct, and has been instructed in a course of studies of medicine, and is well qualified to practise the art of medicine and kindred sciences. That is signed by W. H. Burridge, secretary; George Willey, president; and John C. Sanders, professor of obstetrics; N. Schneider, M.D., chirurgical professor; H. H. Baxter, professor of materia medica and medical clinics; S. A. Boynton, professor of physiology and microscopical anatomy; G. J. Jones, professor of the principle and practice of medicine; H. E. Biggar, professor of gynæcology; W. A. Phillips, professor of ophthalmics; Q. V. Mover, a professor of histology; B. F. Gamber, professor of anatomy; E. B. Bauder, professor of medical jurisprudence; and Herbert C. Foote, professor of clinics.

The two suits of pyjamas which are now shown me are the suits which I found in the same box as the odd pair of trousers. The necks of

the two jackets bear the name of the makers, "Shirt-makers, Jones Brothers (Holloway), Limited, Holloway, N." There is no maker's name on the trousers. In the garden I found a raised heap of earth covered with garden litter and empty flower pots. I caused that to be dug, and I found on the top there was a small quantity of loam or garden mould, and underneath 6 inches to 8 inches of clay, and below that again all loam.

You saw the amount of clay that had been dug from the hole in the cellar?——

The Lord Chief Justice—Is not that going a little too far? It is quite sufficient that somebody did find clay there.

Examination continued—As I have already mentioned, we circulated the description of Mrs. Crippen and made inquiries, but I did not take any further specific steps after 14th July. On 16th July a warrant for the arrest of the prisoner was granted at Bow Street, and it was entrusted to me for execution. Some days afterwards I received some information, and I proceeded to Canada. On 31st July I went on board the steamship "Montrose" at Father Point; she was on the voyage from Antwerp to Quebec. Near the captain's cabin on the deck I saw the prisoner Crippen. He was clean shaven then. He was brought into the captain's cabin. I said, "Good morning, Dr. Crippen; I am Chief Inspector Dew." He said, "Good morning, Mr. Dew." I said, "You will be arrested for the murder and mutilation of your wife, Cora Crippen, in London, on or about the 2nd of February last." Chief Inspector M'Carthy, of the Canadian Provincial Police, cautioned him, and he made no reply. Mr. M'Carthy and Inspector Dennis then searched him in my presence. Exhibits 7, 8, 9, 10, and 11, which are the same articles of jewellery as he had shown me as being the ones which his wife had left behind her, were found on the lower part of his under-vest; the two rings were sewn in and the two brooches were pinned in. Exhibit 12 was fastened to his under-vest with a pin. There were also two cards found upon him. I then left him and went to No. 5 cabin, where I found Miss Le Neve. In the same cabin I found some of Crippen's clothes. At that time Miss Le Neve was dressed as a boy, with her hair cut short. After speaking to her I returned to the captain's cabin, where Crippen was, and then he was taken from that to another cabin. As we were doing that he said, "I am not sorry; the anxiety has been too much." I then read the warrant in detail to him, but he did not make any reply. Mr. M'Carthy then put handcuffs on him, and I said, "We must put these on, because on a card found on you you have written that you intend jumping overboard." He replied, "I won't. I am more than satisfied, because the anxiety has been too awful." Exhibit 2 is one of the cards found upon him. It is a printed card, "E. Robinson & Co., Detroit, Mich. Presented by Mr. John Robinson." and on the back is written, "I cannot stand the horror I go through every night any longer, as I see nothing bright ahead." Exhibit 3 is the other card, a piece of similar card, and on it is written, "Shall we wait until to-night about 10 or 11 o'clock? If not, what time?" In my opinion the handwriting on those cards is Dr.

Crippen's. In his portmanteau I found several other similar printed cards.

By the Lord Chief Justice—The cabin that Miss Le Neve was in was a two-berth cabin, which could be converted into a four-berth cabin. The cards to which I have spoken were found almost immediately after my first speaking to Dr. Crippen on the steamer. He was searched immediately.

Examination continued—Referring to the signature upon the manifest which is now shown to me, "Robinson" is written backwards, but it seems to me to be Dr. Crippen's handwriting. While Dr. Crippen was being further searched he said, "How is Miss Le Neve?" I said, "Agitated, but I am doing all I can for her." He said, "It is only fair to say that she knows nothing about it; I never told her anything." On 20th August I left with the prisoner and Miss Le Neve in my custody for England on board the steamer "Majestic." On 21st August I again read to the prisoner the warrant charging him with the wilful murder of his wife, and in reply he said "Right." On 24th August, during the voyage, I was taking Crippen for deck exercise, and on that occasion he said, "I want to ask you a favour, but I will leave it till Friday." I said, "Tell me what it is now and I can answer as well now as on Friday." He said, "When you took me off the ship I did not see Miss Le Neve, and I don't know how things may go; they may go all right or they may go all wrong with me, and I may never see her again; and I want to ask you if you will let me see her; but I won't speak to her. She has been my only comfort for the last three years." On 29th August, having arrived in England, he was formally charged at Bow Street Police Court. He did not make any reply.

The furs (exhibits 13, 15, 16, and 18) were taken away by me from Hilldrop Crescent on 5th September. Those are some of the furs which I had seen on 14th July and other dates. They were in a large trunk in the first-floor back room. Inside the fur muff (exhibit 18) I found a pair of gloves (exhibit 19), size 6. I also found the fur muff (exhibit 20) at the same time. I found the photograph (exhibit 28) in one of the sitting-rooms, and I took possession of it on 5th September. The other photograph (exhibit 29) was sent to me by one of the witnesses. I saw the photograph of Mr. Bruce Miller (exhibit 72) several times in the top bedroom at 39 Hilldrop Crescent. I am not quite sure where the other photograph of Mr. Bruce Miller (exhibit 73) was found, but it was found in the house somewhere. When the furniture was removed all the photographs were retained and put in one corner. On 10th September I again went to 39 Hilldrop Crescent and took possession of the ermine muff and necklet (exhibit 59). On 28th September I went to Albion House, and I took from a wooden box there the ermine jacket and white fur jacket (exhibits 57 and 58).

The Lord Chief Justice—You do not want this in great detail because Mr. Tobin has told us most frankly and properly that he does not dispute that Miss Le Neve did wear furs which were the property of Mrs. Crippen.

Mr. Travers Humphreys—I do not think it is suggested that she wore these.

The Lord Chief Justice—She wore some of them; that is sufficient. (*To the Witness*)—I suppose you probed with the poker between the bricks?—That is so.

Was there any mortar between the bricks then or not?—It could not be described as mortar; it had been very closely packed down, and was covered with coal dust and that sort of thing. I saw no mortar, and I do not think that any had been used. The clay would keep the bricks very firm.

Cross-examined by Mr. Tobin—It was about ten o'clock on Friday, 8th July, when I went to the Hilldrop Crescent house and saw Miss Le Neve. I then went on to Albion House, and I saw Dr. Crippen very shortly before ten. I was with Miss Le Neve between the time I arrived at Hilldrop Crescent and the time I arrived at Albion House; she had no opportunity of communicating in any way with Dr. Crippen during that time. My visit to Hilldrop Crescent was a surprise visit to Miss Le Neve, as was also my visit to Albion House, so far as Dr. Crippen was concerned. When I arrived at Albion House Miss Le Neve volunteered to go and find Crippen. She was with him for two or three minutes, quite a short space of time. At our interview I put a number of questions to him and he answered every one of them quite readily. I suggested going with him to the house and to go over it, and he readily agreed.

He did not show the smallest reluctance?—None at all. I think it would be between six and seven in the evening when we arrived at the Hilldrop Crescent house. Dr. Crippen went with me into every room, and he did not attempt to conceal anything. I said that I should like to go into the cellar, and he came with me.

No difficulty whatever about it?—No.

Did he show the smallest trace of worry or anxiety as to going into the cellar with you?—He was perfectly cool. I should think that we would stay in the cellar for about a couple of minutes. It is a very dark cellar. It would be approximately in the middle of the floor that I afterwards found the remains. I do not think there was any coal lying about the floor at the part where I found the remains; I think the coal was at the side of the cellar.

The part where the remains were subsequently found was, as far as you remember, not covered by coal at all?—No, except dust, and perhaps a small portion of coal, but not much. I suppose I was with Dr. Crippen in the house for about an hour or an hour and a half.

At that time, of course, you were suspicious, although you had not sufficient ground to go upon for arrest? Was that not your state of mind?—Well, I was trying to keep a perfectly clear mind.

I am sure of that, but at the same time you would naturally be suspicious?—I was not satisfied.

And you indicated that to him?—I told him so. I told him that I should have to find his wife.

Did you say, "You must find your wife," or "I must find your wife"?—"I shall have to find her." He said, "I will do all I can to find her."

Did he then in any way indicate alarm or fright, or anything of that kind?—No, he did not. I went next into the cellar on Monday, the 11th,

Evidence for Prosecution.

and I looked round and tested the bricks with the heel of my boot. That is all I did, except to look at the floor as far as I could with a candle. I would spend two or three minutes in the cellar that day. I pushed the bricks with my heel to see if they were loose, but I did not find anything to arouse my suspicions. On an ordinary examination there was nothing to indicate to my eye or to my foot that the cellar floor had been disturbed for years; there was nothing to indicate that there was anything wrong. I went back again on the Tuesday and looked all round, examined the rubbish and moved it, and probably tapped it with my foot, but there was nothing to notice. My examination on the Tuesday lasted about the same time as the one on the Monday. On the Wednesday I made a further examination with a small poker. I went down on my hands and knees and probed all round the cellar with the poker, and at last I found the place where the remains were. I found loose bricks, and on digging up with a spade I found the remains. The remains were what might be called close packed, heavily packed, with clay above them to a depth of 5 inches.

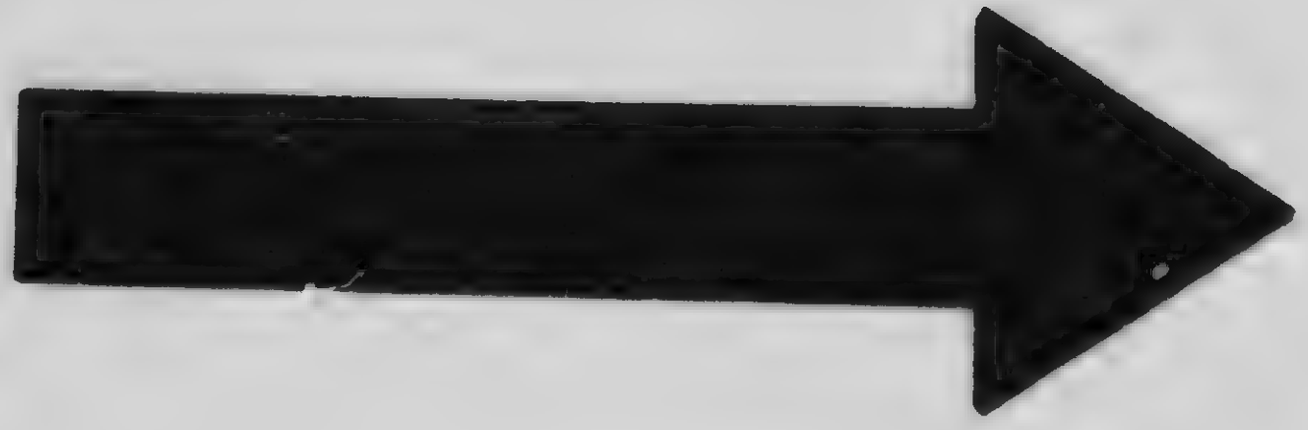
They were rammed in?—Yes, rammed in, but looser there than in other parts of the cellar where there were no remains. I would describe the remains as close packed with clay. The cellar was 3 yards long by 2 yards 3 inches wide; the length of the remains was 4 feet 1 inch, and the greatest width 20 inches. It was a fairly regular oblong area. The remains were mixed altogether, packed close together in a mass extending over that area. There was lime mixed up with the remains. Of course, as we dug we may have taken some of the lime off the clay.

Take a bit of flesh there and another bit of flesh below it, might there have been lime between—a sprinkling of lime, then some remains, then another sprinkling of lime, and then more remains?—No, there was one mass. There would be nothing actually in between; it would all be either at the bottom or at the side. So far as I could judge, the lime was all round the remains, over them, under them, and at the side of them, but not mixed up with them in the sense of layers. There were different bits of skin of different sizes found amongst the remains.

Mixed up and folded over in parts, jumbled up all together?—All together; this huge mass of flesh was all together.

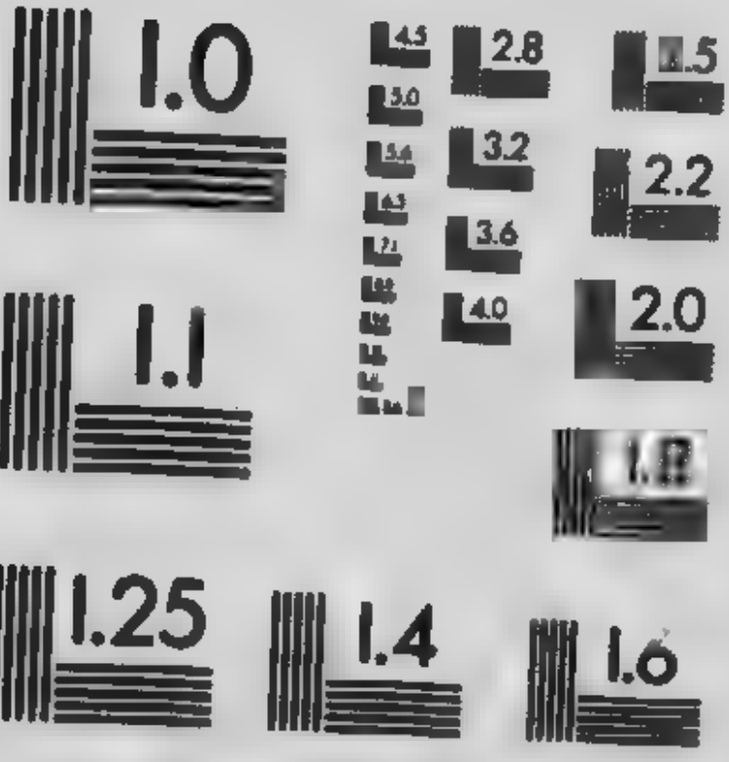
Were any parts of those bits of skin folded over?—I cannot say. It was impossible for me to make such a close examination as that. I found the first lot of remains about five o'clock, and then I sent for Dr. Marshall. They remained there till he came, but I had not taken up much then.

Then when Dr. Marshall came the remains were taken out?—Oh, no, not touched at all. I sent for two police officers with spades and other implements, and we then dug completely round this mass of flesh and uncovered it. We covered that up about twelve o'clock midnight, and locked the cellar door; we left two police officers in charge and left the house. We did not touch the remains at all as far as we could help. We laid some boards over the hole that we had made. Mr. Pepper and Dr. Marshall came about eleven o'clock next day, and they stayed till the remains were removed by an undertaker. They made some examination of them, and then about two o'clock the remains were placed in a shell and removed to the mortuary, and passed out of my care entirely.



MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)



APPLIED IMAGE Inc
1653 East Main Street
Rochester, New York 14609 USA
(716) 482 - 0300 - Phone
(716) 288 - 5989 - Fax

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

Walter Dew

I boarded the "Montrose" at Father Point about 8.30 in the morning of 31st July. Passengers by that boat would not disembark there in ordinary course, and it would be against the regulations for the cargo to be landed. Father Point is about twelve hours on this side of Quebec for a vessel like the "Montrose." It all depends on how long they are delayed at the quarantine station before they reach Quebec. It took us sixteen hours, as we were delayed. The quarantine station is about 12 or 14 miles off Quebec. A pilot must always be taken on board at Father Point for vessels going up to Quebec.

The two cards that have been read were found on Crippen shortly after I got on board. I am absolutely satisfied that Crippen had no opportunity of writing those cards after I had spoken to him. One of the cards has on the back of it, "I cannot stand the horror I go through every night any longer, and, as I see nothing bright ahead, and money has come to an end, I have made up my mind to jump overboard to-night. I know I have spoilt your life, but I hope some day you can learn to forgive me; with best words of love, your H." That is written in his handwriting, as I believe. As far as I know, Miss Le Neve and Crippen occupied the same cabin the whole way across.

Therefore if the information on that card, "I cannot stand the horror, I have made up my mind to jump overboard," was intended for Miss Le Neve, really there was no need to put it in writing?—I do not know. During the progress of this case I made inquiries as to whether Mrs. Crippen (Belle Elmore) had been earning money on the music hall stage or otherwise during the last few years, and I found that she had earned money, but not much, I should think. During the last four years she earned very little indeed. So far as I can understand, Dr. Crippen was really the bread-winner.

Did you find out that Belle Elmore was never regularly on the music hall stage or any other stage in London?—She was not regarded as a "star." I found that she had been at various music halls and variety halls, in Bristol, and so on—principally local, but not so much in the last three or four years.

I have had charge of this case since 30th June. I have not made any inquiries as to whether Crippen owed debts when he left this country, and I do not think he did.

Re-examined by Mr. Muir—When I interviewed Dr. Crippen on 8th July at Albion House and at Hilldrop Crescent he appeared to be perfectly calm, and on the voyage from Canada to this country he was perfectly cool and collected. He conversed with me on various subjects other than this case. He did not appear to be at all dejected. There was no difference in his manner after his arrest from what it was before his arrest. The hole in the cellar where the earth was loose was practically limited to the space occupied by the remains.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Round the hole in which the remains were the earth was very firm, as if it had never been disturbed.

When you found the bricks were loose, or could be removed without difficulty, did you happen to notice whether that extended over the whole area?—Oh, no. I had previously tested round the sides of the cellar and

at each end, and it was when I came to this particular spot that I found those bricks were loose. The others were quite firm. In my judgment, the area of loose bricks about corresponded with the hole.

ALBERT FRANK LEVERTON, examined by Mr. MUIR—I am an undertaker. I attended with a shell and coffin at the cellar at 39 Hilldrop Crescent on 14th July. I did not see the remains put into the shell. I screwed the shell down myself and took it to the mortuary, and left it there screwed down.

Cross-examined by Mr. HUNTLY JENKINS—Was there earth all over the remains?—I did not have sufficient opportunity to examine the remains to see what they were. Before the magistrate I said I saw some earth with the remains, what little I saw of them.

I do not suggest that you thoroughly examined them, but you did see some earth mixed up with the remains?—Yes. I could not tell how the remains were put into the coffin, whether by hand or by spade.

DANIEL GOOCH, examined by Mr. MUIR—I am police constable 501 of the "Y" Division. On 13th July I assisted in digging in a cellar at 39 Hilldrop Crescent, and on the 14th, with another constable named Martin, I put the remains into a shell. We used nothing but our hands in doing so.

Cross-examined by Mr. HUNTLY JENKINS—The floor of the cellar was laid with bricks. There was a very bad smell coming from the remains, which were in a number of small pieces.

Dr. AUGUSTUS JOSEPH PEPPER, examined by Mr. MUIR—I am a Master in Surgery at the London University and a Fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons. I am consulting surgeon at St. Mary's Hospital. I have been in active practice as a surgeon for about thirty-five years. On 14th July of this year I went to 39 Hilldrop Crescent with Chief Inspector Dew, and I met Dr. Marshall there. In the cellar I found that part of the floor had been taken up, and in a hole in the ground I saw what appeared to be animal remains, including in the word "animal," human. I looked at the soil and saw that it was composed partly of loam and partly of clay with some lime mixed in it. I also found some articles in the hole; some of these were taken from the hole and put on a tray. Among them there was a tuft of dark brown hair in a Hinde's curler. Before it was stretched out it appeared to be 3½ inches long. The natural colour of the hair was dark brown; the part in the curler showed gradations of bleaching. I also found a small piece of fair hair lying in a large handkerchief, what is called a man's size, with no identification mark on it. Two corners were tied in a reef knot; it was torn through opposite the knot, where it was very much decayed. There were also two small pieces of cloth of a reddish brown colour and a portion of a woman's undervest with six buttons, one of which was fastened. It had a lace collar and armlets. These articles were thickly encrusted with cement-like terial. There was also a large piece of flesh, composed of skin, fat, a. nuscle. That came from the thigh and lower part of the buttock.

Of a human being?—Oh, yes. There was also a piece of coarse

Dr. Pepper

string-like material, which is of no importance. Those articles were placed on a tray. I instructed the police as to what should be done with the remaining portion of the remains, and it was done in my presence. I examined the contents of the shell at the mortuary next day. I found that all the bones had been removed, the head was missing, and the limbs were missing, except that piece of the thigh, and another piece which very likely came from the thigh, but there was no bone or part of a bone. On 15th July I placed in five jars some of the organs that were found.

By the Lord Chief Justice—We ought to have, and I think I should like to have it now, the organs which were found?—The viscera of the chest and abdomen, in one piece, that is, the heart, the lungs, the lower 2½ inches of the windpipe, the gullet, the liver, the kidneys, spleen, stomach, pancreas.

Then except the organs of generation the internal organs were practically all the organs of the body?—Yes.

Examination continued—On the 15th July I found a piece of skin measuring 11 inches by 9 inches with some fat attached to it. That was in addition to the two pieces I have spoken of before. That piece came from the upper part of the abdomen and lower part of the chest. I found another piece of skin, 7 inches by 6 inches, which came from the lower part, the front portion of the abdomen. There was a mark upon that piece which attracted my attention, and I afterwards examined it with particularity. I spent several hours examining it.

In your opinion, as the result of that examination, what was that mark?—It was the mark of a scar, a little over 4 inches in length. That scar would have been visible upon the piece of skin. When that piece was in position on the human body in my opinion it was in the middle line in front, it may have been a little to the left; it began just above the pubes and extended for 4 inches or a little over. The whole scar was complete. There was a piece of flesh beyond it. It was quite an old scar. There was no trace of any genitals at all, or any certain anatomical indication of sex. There was hair on that piece of flesh—in my opinion pubic hair. I also found a portion of a woman's woollen or cotton combinations. At my casual examination I could not tell whether it was woollen or cotton, but I have since examined it with the microscope, and I have found that it was cotton. There was lace on the armlets and on the front. I also found portions of a pyjama jacket. The jar which is now produced contains the portion of the pyjama jacket with the collar on, and it has a label, "Shirtmakers, Jones Brothers, Holloway, Limited, Holloway, N." On referring to the collars of the jackets of the two suits of pyjamas already produced I find that the labels are exactly the same. The separate piece in the jar is the front part of the pyjama jacket with the button on. On referring to the buttons on the jacket which have been already produced, I find that they are the same make, and I should think they would be the same size, only this has shrunken somewhat in pressure and manipulation. The other jar which is produced contains a portion of a sleeve of the pyjama jacket.

Having examined the manner in which the viscera have been extracted from that body, are you able to say whether it was done by a skilled person or not?—Yes, it must have been.

Evidence for Prosecution.

You mean the extraction from the body?—The removal of the viscera from the body. It has been done by a person skilled in removing viscera.

By the Lord Chief Justice—That is dissection, I suppose?—Dissection. Of human beings?—Well, I would not like to go s. far as that, but certainly in evisceration of animals. There is no cut or tear in any part except where it was necessary for the removal. It was removed all in one piece. All the organs I have described were connected together, and the diaphragm or the septum between the chest and abdomen had been cut round.

Examination continued—In my opinion that would certainly require skill. There were no organs of generation there at all. It is quite likely that some of them may have been removed in life. The scar which I saw would be in that position if an operation was performed for the purpose of removing some of the organs of generation—the pelvic organs, the ovaries or the uterus, or all combined.

By the Lord Chief Justice—The scar is in a place which corresponds with an operation for the removal of the ovaries.

Examination continued—I formed the opinion that those remains had been buried from four to eight months. In forming that opinion I took into consideration the place where they were buried, the surrounding materials, the lime and the earth, and the depth at which they were buried. In my opinion they were buried very shortly after death.

In your opinion is it possible that those remains could have been buried there before 21st September, 1905?[1]—Oh, no, absolutely impossible. I put the heart, stomach, a portion of liver, and one kidney into a jar. The other kidney was dissected, but it was left in the body. In a second jar I put the clothes that I have spoken of. In a third jar I put the hair in the metal curler, the tuft of hair found in the handkerchief, the handkerchief, some portions of woody fibre, and a portion of the undervest which I have spoken to as being a female garment. In a fourth jar I put the arm-piece of the broad striped flannelette material of the pyjama. In a fifth jar I put the right posterior portion of the pyjama with a label on, and the piece with the button. The longest hairs that were found were 8 inches, and the shortest were 2½ inches, and, of course, there were intermediate lengths. Being of that length, and being partly bleached, the hair was that of a woman. The dark brown part of the hair was the hair of the root. The roots were present. Exhibit 44 is the part of hair that was placed by me in the third jar. It is darker now than it was when I first saw it. Exhibit 45 is the portion of the hair that I found in the handkerchief. I think it is slightly darker now than it was then.

By the Lord Chief Justice—The fact of its having got darker is due, I think, partly to the drying and partly to being more compressed together, and then possibly the bleaching effect has gone off somewhat.

Examination continued—On 5th August, at St. Mary's Hospital, I examined the hair in the Hinde's curler, exhibit 46. I found that the greater part was from 2 inches to 3 inches long. The longest part was 6 inches long. The colour was dark brown, shading off to light brown. I think it is somewhat darker than it was when I examined it. I ex-

[1] The date when Crippen became tenant of the house.—Ed.

amined two loose hairs at the mortuary on 8th August; they were lying loose on a part of the abdominal wall. One was 5½ inches long, and the other was 8 inches; they were of the same colour as the other hair that I had seen, dark brown. In my opinion these were a woman's hairs. On 27th August I examined exhibit 47, which is some more hair in a Hinde's curler. It is from 2 inches to 4 inches in length, and in my opinion it is the same sort of hair as the other as to colour, and as to being a woman's hair. I examined twenty hairs, which I believe to be pubic hairs; some were still fixed to the skin, while others were free. They were dark brown in colour like the dark part of the hair of No. 1 specimen, exhibit 44. They were from ½ inch to 1 inch in length; they showed the roots at one end, and the other end tapered off. In all the other specimens the hairs, of course, had been cut.

I found the stomach, the kidneys, the heart, the liver, and the pancreas all to be healthy, as far as one could tell. There was no sign of disease in any one of those organs, or anything to account for death, so far as looking at it is concerned. The spleen was very soft, as one would expect, from decomposition, but nothing else was detectable in it as being wrong. The intestines were healthy, as were also the lungs, which were more advanced in decomposition than the other organs, except the spleen. There was nothing to show disease or to account for death; there was no consolidation and no sign of there having been pleurisy—no marks on the surface. From the remains that I examined I would say that the person was stout when in life. I have seen the photographs, exhibits 28 and 29.

The Lord Chief Justice—I hardly think you need go into all that

Examination continued—The kidneys were in an exceedingly good state of preservation. On 9th September I was present at St. Mary's Hospital when a piece of the skin bearing the mark which I say is an old scar was removed for microscopical examination, and I was present when that piece was microscopically examined on 13th September by Dr. Spilsbury. I also examined it myself; the examination I made quite corroborated my previous opinion.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I had not the slightest doubt, without examining it with the microscope, that it was the scar of an old wound, and that was confirmed by the microscopical examination.

Examination continued—The person in life would be an adult, young or middle-aged. I did not find anything to account for death in anything that I examined among those remains.

Cross-examined by Mr. Tobin—Taking a mass of human remains by themselves—without anything else like hair in Hinde's curlers, and so on—it is quite impossible to tell the sex, except upon anatomical grounds. There are no anatomical grounds in this case to enable me to say with certainty the sex.

As to the great dexterity you have already told us that was required to remove these organs in the way they were removed, it would require a really practised hand and eye, would it not?—Certainly.

A man frequently accustomed to dissect bodies or to conduct post-mortem examinations, or matters of that kind?—No, a person who had

previously done it, but not necessarily continuously. If a person had once learned how to do it he could do it.

Suppose a student in the hospitals learnt it, and then there was a long lapse of time afterwards—fifteen years or so—surely the hand and eye have to be pretty well accustomed?—I think he could do it quite as well after ten years as he could at the time. It is not a minute dissection; it is a particular kind of work. I cannot pledge my memory as to when I was first asked to express an opinion as to how long those remains had been in the ground. On 15th July I formed the opinion as to the length of time of burial. Mr. Dew was at Hilldrop Crescent when I went there on 14th July. I am not sure that he told me that the woman was said to have disappeared about 15th February of that year; he may have done so, but I do not remember. At any rate, I would hear that very soon after, if not on the 14th.

I suppose it is quite beyond the reach of science to determine with accuracy the period of death from the process of putrefaction?—Yes.

And is this true, too, that two different bodies buried in the same soil and under apparently similar conditions frequently present such differences as to baffle all attempts at generalisation?—Yes.

Would putrefaction be retarded in the case of human remains buried, closely packed in clay and lime, 5 inches of such stuff above them, and a depth of 3 inches?

By the Lord Chief Justice—Take the general question first; would lime or clay retard putrefaction?—It depends. There are two kinds of decomposition taking place in dead bodies—one where it is freely exposed to the air and warmth, and the other where it is damp and largely excluded from the air, and that is what happened in this case.

Taking it as it was in the ground, would lime and clay retard either form of putrefaction?—It would retard the common form of putrefaction, but the presence of damp clay would favour the change which happened in this case. It would not be putrefaction in the ordinary sense. It is a peculiar change which takes place; the tissues become converted into a kind of soap, the technical name of which is adipocere.

Cross-examination continued—Buried in clay, adipocere would be created more quickly and ordinary putrefaction would be retarded. Taking a person of Mrs. Crippen's age and build, I should say that the normal weight of the kidney of a woman like that would vary from 3 to 4½ ounces. In point of fact, the weight of the kidney in this case was, I think, 2¾ ounces.

The normal weight would be 4½ ounces, and you think it was 2¾ ounces. What would that be due to?—That would be due largely to removal of moisture from the kidney—desiccation.

Was there any putrefaction of the kidney?—There was some change in the kidney; I do not want to use the word "putrefaction." I do not agree that there was ordinary putrefaction; there was very decided formation of adipocere.

With regard to the piece of skin 7 inches by 6 inches, which is now shown to you in the jar produced—I want two points about that, whether it came from the abdomen, as your opinion is, and whether the mark on

it is a scar or not. Before you formed an opinion even that the mark on that piece of skin was a scar, had you already heard that Mrs. Crippen had had an operation?—Certainly. I do not remember when it was that I first heard that Mrs. Crippen had had an operation. I would be quite ready to admit that it was within a week after I had first seen the remains, but I do not remember the time.

If that scar came from the lower part of the abdomen of somebody, you are satisfied in your opinion, as I understand, that the navel was once upon that piece of skin?—I believe it would have been.

Is it not the case that, running at right angles to the navel, at right angles to the perpendicular line up the stomach, there are what are called tendinous intersections?—Yes.

Are those white fibres at right angles to the navel?—Yes.

Are there also—I am not talking now of that piece of skin in particular—ordinary tendinous intersections at right angles to the perpendicular line up the stomach on a level with the bottom of the breast bone?—Yes. There are also three tendinous intersections at right angles between those two points, the navel and the bottom of the breast bone. There may also be tendinous intersections a little below the navel, but that varies very much.

By the Lord Chief Justice—What does the word "tendinous" mean—colour, or what?—Structure. A tendon is what is commonly called a leader or guide. There are two long muscles reaching from the chest to the pelvis—two straight muscles; and to give additional strength and support they are divided by these three tendinous intersections. It is the muscle intersected by transverse tendons.

Cross-examination continued—You say that in your opinion, if that does come from the lower part of somebody's abdomen, the navel must have been on it?—The navel, in my opinion, was originally on this piece of skin, but it is possible, of course, that it was not.

Therefore it must have been removed from that piece of skin, if your opinion is right?—Yes.

Is there any trace whatever there of the tendinous intersections of which I have spoken running at right angles to the navel?—No. I point out to the jury where on that piece of skin I think the navel originally was—at the top of the scar. I ought to say that that scar is not so long as the wound of the operation would have been.

It is at the top of what I may call a horse-shoe depression?—Yes, if you can call it so.

[The witness pointed out to the jury the place where the navel was, what had been called the top of the horse-shoe depression.]

Would you not expect to find, at right angles to what you think was originally the site of the navel, the tendinous intersections?—No; you might not find that at all, because the tendinous intersection does not involve the skin; it only involves the muscles underneath, and there the muscles had been cut away. I should not see them, it wants turning upside down to answer this question.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Your answer is that you would not expect to find it where Mr. Tobin has pointed out?—That is so.

Now, turn it upside down on the tray, and let us know what you say?—I say that the muscle is cut across lower than the skin, and the tendinous

intersection is only in the muscle; therefore this might have been cut across at the level, or just immediately above the navel, without showing that tendinous intersection.

Your answer is that you would not of necessity find the tendinous intersections in that piece of flesh?—That is so.

Cross-examination continued—The *linea alba* (the white line) is the vertical line from the chest running down to the pubic bone. The *linea alba* is not on the surface of the skin; the *linea alba* indicates where the tendons underneath are joined.

Is the *linea alba* a thing that, looking at a man's chest, you see with your eye?—You never see it on the chest.

It is inside; it is underneath the surface?—There is a line running down the centre; you always see a slight line there.

But underneath the surface of the skin that line is white, and it is called the *linea alba?*—Certainly, where the tendons join.

Is there not enough there for the *linea alba* to exist, if really that does come from the lower part of the abdomen?—No, because there is only muscle on one side there.

Very great dexterity would be required to remove the peritoneum, the lining of the cavity right inside?—I never saw any one attempt to remove it.

Is there any trace of the peritoneum there?—No, certainly not.

Then it must have been removed?—Certainly, but not removed by itself. The body has been cut up, and it has been taken out evenly in the whole thickness with considerable quantities left behind, as shown by this preparation.

That would be a good indication of whether that piece of skin really came from the lower part of somebody's abdomen?—You mean if it was there?

Yes?—I very much doubt if you would recognise it clearly in this condition; but, assuming that you could see it, of course it would tell you that it was from the abdomen.

I suppose you have looked to see whether you can see it?—Certainly.

If it is not there it must have been removed?—It was removed during the cutting up of the body.

On that piece of skin is there some hair visible?—Yes.

In your examination-in-chief you expressed the opinion that those were pubic hairs?—Yes. They are on the right side only of the piece of skin, taking the skin as on the body.

If those are pubic hairs, then those on the left side must have fallen out?—Yes.

If they have fallen out on the left side there may have been hairs over other portions of that piece of skin that have also fallen out?—Certainly.

Therefore it may have been all more or less covered with hair at one time; one cannot tell with certainty, can one?—No; there is only one place where pubic hairs are found in this specimen, and that is at the bottom in a line.

Dr. Pepper

Is the removal of the navel a usual operation?—It is very common indeed.

If the navel had once been removed from that piece of skin it goes without saying that that mark is a scar. How many times did you examine that piece of skin before you came to the conclusion that it was a scar?—I came to the conclusion immediately—at least within quarter to half an hour on my first examination. I have not the slightest doubt that it was a scar.

Did you ever come to that conclusion before you examined it with Dr. Marshall on 8th August?—That is the time I am speaking of.

The 8th August was the first time you came to the conclusion that it was a scar?—That is so.

Before that you had heard that Mrs. Crippen had had an operation there?—Yes.

How many times had you examined that piece of skin before 8th August?—Once before, casually; I had not completed my examination.

On 14th July how long were you looking at the remains? Three hours?—Oh, no. I spent two hours and three quarters in the house, and that included the examination of house and garden. I should say that I did not spend more than half an hour looking at the remains. I commenced the examination of the remains, and found it was impossible to finish the examination there.

On 15th July did you and Dr. Marshall at the mortuary examine the remains?—Yes, I think for two hours and three quarters or three hours.

On that occasion you did not come to the conclusion that it was a scar?—I did not see it; I did not see the mark. I have no doubt I saw that piece of skin with other pieces, but I did not see this mark on it, and therefore the question of scar did not arise then.

Was it about 18th July that you heard of the operation?—I cannot remember when I heard of it. I do not agree that the condition of that piece of skin makes it very difficult to say whether that mark is a scar at all. Looking at the horse-shoe depression, as we have called it, the left limb of that so-called horse-shoe is undoubtedly due to a folding of the skin after death. The scar begins at the lower part where it is cut across, and it ends quite definitely at that part where I point to. It is practically straight, slightly curving at the upper part.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Is that as high as the navel would have been, or not as high, or above it?—The navel varies so exceedingly. Being 4½ inches, one might easily allow an inch for contraction, and that would take it to 5½ inches.

What would be the distance between the navel and the pubic bone?—I do not know the stoutness of the woman or the age of the woman, and it depends what part you are starting from—whether you start from the surface or the bone. When I was cross-examined before the magistrate I was definitely asked with regard to the starting point of the bone—not the skin.

Cross-examination continued—As I have already said, one limb of the so-called horse-shoe was due to a folding of the skin after death. In my

opinion it is quite impossible that the other limb of that horse-shoe was equally caused by a folding of the skin after death.

The limb of the horse-shoe that you admit is due to a fold shows a well-defined depression or groove, does it not?—Yes.

Showing that there must have been considerable pressure or weight above it from the earth and so on?—There must have been some—or even the weight of the exhibit itself would be sufficient to do it. You can see definitely here where the left limb of the horse-shoe forming the top part runs—distinctly into the straight line of the scar. The scar and what is called the depression are not due to the same cause. The left limb of the horse-shoe is due to the fold, and the right limb of the horse-shoe in my opinion is due to an operation. The left limb of what is called the horse-shoe and the curve of the horse-shoe—the convexity—form entirely one line. It runs into this straight line which I say is a scar.

I am very sorry, but I must ask you to look at it again?—It is quite stereotyped in my mind.

But I want you to look at it with me. [The witness went down into the well of the Court.] There is a depression continuously right round the area of the depression, or so-called horse-shoe—a continuous depression?—Quite so. The scar is not part of the so-called horse shoe. My contention is that the scar runs on the right side, nearly straight, and that the left limb and the curve of the so-called horse-shoe are formed by the fold.

You have examined that, of course, under a microscope?—I have examined a small piece that was cut out of the centre of what I say is the scar.

You have told me that in your opinion the right side of the depression, the straighter line, is not due to pressure. Now, I ask you whether you have examined the right side with the microscope?—Certainly.

Are there on that right side of the so-called horse shoe at intervals little groups of transverse lines, four lines in each, at regular intervals?—On the left side.

No, on the right limb of the so-called horse-shoe?—I know, but on the left side of the right limb.

By the Lord Chief Justice—On the left side of what you call the scar?—Yes.

Cross-examination continued—Are there marks in the area there of what you consider to be a scar?—Yes, on the left side.

Little groups consisting of four lines in each?—That is right—on the left side—not on the right side.

But those are in the area of the scar?—Yes.

Do they in part go beyond the area of the so-called scar?—A little.

There were found, were there not, some bits of a woman's combinations, or woman's underclothing, and some bits of a vest made of elastic material?—Yes.

Have you ascertained whether or not those little groups of four lines in each, which you admit are partly in the area of the so-called scar and partly outside it, are exactly similar to the pattern of the elastic material?

Dr. Pepper

—I think in the vest the ribbing is wider, but if you show me the vest I can tell you.

Take jar No. 2, which contains the combinations. Have you compared the pattern of the stuff composing these combinations with these groups of four lines each on the area of the scar and travelling beyond it?—No, I have not.

Then you cannot say whether or not the patterns precisely correspond?—No, I cannot.

If they do, that would be a clear indication that those marks, at any rate, are caused by the pressure of the materials?—They might on the left side, but not on the right. The scar is not a line—it is ⅞ inch wide at the lower part. The marks you are speaking of in groups are on the left side of that.

I understood you to say that those marks were in the area of the so-called scar, and travelled outside it on one side?—I should say that they do not go beyond the area of the scar. I have examined with the microscope a piece which was cut, and I say that those groups of lines do not go outside.

That piece of skin has been examined by a medical gentleman on behalf of the defence for some hours, and on several occasions, has it not?—Certainly.

Are you prepared to say whether or not those groups of four lines travel and are within the area of the so-called scar?—Certainly.

Are you prepared to say whether they are outside it?—I think not.

You think not, but you have never examined it under the microscope?—I am looking at it now, and I see marks distinctly, and the end of the marks and the scar; the marks are quite distinct here now, and I see that they end, or apparently end, at the margin of the scar.

You are examining it now with your eyes, not with the microscope?

The Lord Chief Justice—That we can see for ourselves, Mr. Tobin.

Cross-examination continued—Those groups of four lines each may have been caused by the pressure of a fabric, but not on the right side. There are hundreds of lines there, as it were, showing the marking of the scar.

Can you attribute those little groups of four lines each to anything else except the pressure of the fabric?—No, I should think that is the most likely explanation, but the whole scar is fibrillated.

Supposing, as you think, one limb is due to folding, and the other side of the depression is due to an operation, and, therefore, a scar, as you think, would you not expect that if a piece was cut across the folded depression and a piece cut across the area of the so-called scar, the cut edges of the piece cut from the so-called scar would be different from the cut edges of the piece of the groove where there never had been a scar at all?—Not necessarily, because the folding over would attenuate the skin at that part—the continued pressure of it.

As a matter of fact, both limbs of the so-called horse-shoe were cut across on 9th September?—Yes, but I am not quite certain of the date. It was under my instructions that they were cut across. It is quite likely that the cut edges of the skin so cut from both limbs presented exactly the same appearance.

Evidence for Prosecution.

Dr. Pepper

Do you know that on the same date, 9th September, a piece was cut right across the area of the so-called scar, and extending beyond the so-called scar on each side, and handed to Dr. Spilsbury?—Yes. My instructions were that it should be done in that way.

Now, would you not expect the cut edges of that piece that were originally within the scar to be different in appearance from the cut edges of the skin just outside the area of the so-called scar on each side?—Not necessarily, because the superficial area of the skin has entirely gone, and this has become hardened and horny; the whole skin on the surface is almost like leather now. I examined, both with the naked eye and the microscope, that bit of skin so cut by my directions across and beyond the area of the so-called scar.

Do you agree that there was no difference whatever in size, number, or arrangement of the fibres in the part immediately below the surface, either within the area of the scar or outside it?—Yes, and in the part which I say was the scar the fibres are denser—they are more densely placed than the fibres forming the skin. A very important point is that there were glands of the skin still remaining in the skin on each side of the scar; there were no remains of glands in the part which I say is the scar.

Would not an operation cause an alteration in the size, number, and arrangement of the fibres in the part immediately below the surface?—Not necessarily. What operation are you speaking of?

I am speaking of an operation in the abdomen of a woman, a wound going through the entire wall of the abdomen?—Then they might unite very accurately indeed, so that afterwards you could not tell really that an operation had been done except from the line of the scar.

It is a very unusual thing for them to unite very accurately?—Not at all.

Is it not generally the case that after an operation there is more or less apposition afterwards of the fibres? There must be almost invariably some little growth of new tissue?—There must be new tissue which unites the two edges of the wound—you could not get a scar if there was not new tissue; but it may unite, and frequently does, so accurately that a long time after the operation you cannot tell really, except by the line on the surface, that an operation has been done.

Would you expect, as a rule, to find on a scar after an operation a continuous white line?—If the scar is not stretched you get a continuous white line.

Then you would expect a continuous white line, unless there had been a stretching of the scar?—Certainly.

Next, if a scar is stretched, does it not ordinarily stretch in a lozenge shape—wider in the middle?—Not necessarily. A scar at the lower part of the abdomen very often does not, because you have the tendons frequently separated during the operation, allowing the scar to be wider at the top. It would be somewhat triangular in shape.

On that point, what is the measurement of this so-called scar?—Seven-eighths of an inch at the lower part, half an inch at the middle, and a quarter of an inch near the top. It is exactly the scar that I have seen many times after an operation in this part.

Dr. Pepper

In the majority of cases, if there has been an operation, do you not expect afterwards to see marks of the stitches?—In the majority of cases, yes; in many, no.

Are there any marks that you can clearly identify as stitches in this case?—No. There are some marks which are doubtful, and therefore I am not ready to admit that they are not marks of stitches. They suggest it, but they do not prove it. Where you have had a scar which has become broad like that, very often the stitch marks become merged in the margin of the scar; but, even apart from that, stitch marks frequently disappear altogether.

Re-examined by Mr. MUIR—I was cross-examined at the Police Court as to this piece of flesh having come from the abdominal wall. It was suggested to me then that the aponeurosis was absent from it. An aponeurosis is practically a flat tendon. The muscles of the abdomen are flat—where the muscular part ends it is flat. To-day I have been asked nothing at all about the aponeurosis. The presence of the aponeurosis proves absolutely that this comes from the lower part of the abdomen, in front. Further, there are upon that piece the pubic hairs, to which attention has been called.

You were asked whether Inspector Dew told you the date on which Mrs. Crippen disappeared. Had your knowledge, or want of knowledge, of when she disappeared any effect whatever upon the opinion you formed as to the time those remains had been in the ground?—None whatever. That would not have the slightest effect upon my judgment as a scientific man.

You were asked also whether or not before you discovered that scar you knew Mrs. Crippen had been operated upon, and you said that you did. Had that information any effect upon your opinion as a scientific man as to whether or not this was a scar?—No. I may say that I did not discover the scar till 8th August, and if I had wanted to find the scar I should have found it before. The opinions that I have expressed to the jury are my opinions as a scientific man upon the examination of the subject that I have been speaking to. The small weight of the kidney found in the remains would be due to loss of moisture, and that in my opinion would be very largely due to the presence of the large quantity of lime there which would absorb the moisture.

What is the effect of quicklime upon flesh?—Absolute quicklime destroys it by abstracting the moisture, becoming converted into hydrate.

If you had a sufficient quantity of quicklime—really quicklime, that is, real dry lime—it would destroy the whole?—Yes.

Would the presence of damp clay round quicklime have any effect upon its action?—The damp clay would tend, of course, to convert the quicklime, if it was quicklime, into slaked lime. The presence of the clay would make the action of the lime less strong. If lime absorbs moisture from anything, from the air or the clay, it loses its power altogether.

When it becomes slaked what is its effect upon flesh?—It does not corrode it then; it only becomes slaked, but you have a great deal of carbonate of lime formed, and the carbonate of lime facilitates and hastens the formation of adipocere.

Evidence for Prosecution.

Dr Pepper

With regard to the preservation or otherwise of the tissues, how does the slaked lime act, if it acts at all?—I think it would practically be inert as being a protection. Although I have expressed the opinion that the navel was upon that piece of flesh as it originally existed, and that it had been removed by an operation, it is, of course, quite possible that the navel may have been outside the area of that piece of flesh. The distance varies in individuals—in my experience it has varied from 4 inches to 6½ inches. The 6½ inches would not be sufficient to take it outside the area of that piece; this is 7 inches. I think it is most probable that it was within the area of that piece of skin.

You were asked about the tendinous intersections being absent from that piece of flesh. If the entire wall of the abdomen had been present in that piece of flesh, would you have found the tendinous intersections?—Yes.

Is the centre wall of the abdomen present there?—No.

Is the part of it which would contain the tendinous intersections there?—No. Their absence from that piece of flesh does not in any way tend to show that that is not a part of the wall of the abdomen. I am confident that it is part of the wall of the abdomen, and of the lower part of the front of the abdomen. That same observation applies to the *linea alba*. In the thirty-five years since I took my fellowship I have performed many hundreds of abdominal operations. The scar which I found there is such as I have frequently found in my actual practice. It is by no means uncommon where we perform that operation in the middle line to find the white line absent. I examined those remains in the cellar on the 14th and in the mortuary on the 15th July. That was a favourable time at which to form an opinion as to how long the remains had been in the ground. If I had examined the remains for the first time on 9th September it would not have been possible to form an opinion of any value as to how long they had been in the ground, because then they had been largely exposed to the air and the ordinary putrefactive process, decomposition, had attacked them. This piece that I have before me has been preserved in a special preparation since 8th August. It would not be possible now to form an opinion of any value from that piece which has been preserved as to the time that the remains had been in the ground, because it is somewhat altered by being in that preservative. On 8th August it was in a very different condition from what it is in now. The appearance of the fat and everything has altered. I examined the section made for Dr. Willcox. I found no glands in the part which I say is a scar; I found glands on each side of it. Further, I found that the fibres in the scar were more densely placed than outside. There are also glands in the so-called left limb in the horse-shoe where the fold was.

Further cross examined by Mr. Tobin—In the area of what you believe to be a scar you would never expect to find a sebaceous gland, would you?—Not in the scar itself.

But I say in the area of what you believe to be a scar you would not expect to find a sebaceous gland?—That is where the scar is a perfect scar. You have not got it like two bricks lying one by the side of the other; there is a gradation. Where there is a perfect scar there can be no glands.

In that mark, which in your opinion is a scar, you would not expect to find a sebaceous gland?—Not in the part which is a perfect scar, but

you have the normal parts graduating off. It graduates off to the edges, so that you do not get a perfect scar there. There are no sebaceous glands in the area of the scar.

If the jury should believe hereafter that there is a sebaceous gland in the area of the scar—within the area of the so-called perfect scar—would that not be proof conclusive that it was not a scar?—I am afraid I cannot answer that.

A sebaceous gland cannot exist in a perfect scar?—Certainly not in a perfect scar.

Would the same observation apply to the hair follicles of the skin? If it be established that within the area of what you believe to be a perfect scar there is hair, and the hair follicles of the skin, that would be proof conclusive that it was not a scar?—Well, you have to be absolutely certain that it is an absolutely perfect scar. If you say that, then I say you will not get hair follicles in it.

By the Lord Chief Justice—There are two or three questions I want to ask you. First, I do not quite understand what has been put to you, but I wish to put it on two hypotheses. I first want to ask a question as to whether this is a scar; and, secondly, as to its position. We will keep the two things separate. As to its being a scar, I understand you to say that it is nearly an inch wide at the bottom?—Seven-eighths of an inch.

And it tapers off to something like a quarter of an inch?—Yes.

Is that in accordance with your experience as to the shape of a scar when it becomes a dried and old scar in an abdominal operation? You find it bigger at the bottom than at the top?—Yes, and repeatedly in this situation.

Do you generally find, when it does take place between the navel and the pubic region, that that is the shape the scar assumes?—Frequently.

Is the navel ever removed in operations?—Oh, yes; I have done it many times myself.

Therefore the presence or absence of the navel after the operation will not be conclusive one way or the other?—No.

Now, I want to ask you whether or not you can say that in your opinion you have no doubt that this is a scar?—I have no doubt.

With that before you, will you tell the jury the reasons why you say it was the lower abdominal region, that is between the navel and the pubes?—In the first place, the scar is wider at the bottom than at the top; and, secondly, there is this line of hair, which in my opinion is pubic hair.

The pubic hair goes higher up in some individuals than it does in others?—Oh, yes.

Do you see any indication of hair on that specimen above the region which you think is the pubic region?—No.

Therefore it would confirm your view that it has reached down to the pubes, where the hair grows, and has gone up towards the navel?—Yes.

It is suggested that it is a scar of an operation between the navel and the breast bone, as I understood it. Can you understand that at all?—I say absolutely that that is not a piece of flesh which came from above the navel.

Evidence for Prosecution.

Mr. Tobin—That impression is not what I wanted to convey. It is not part of my case, and it was not present to my mind, but I quite appreciate how I may have been misunderstood.

The Lord Chief Justice—Very well. Then we may take it that if it is a scar it is not suggested to be above the navel.

(*To Witness*)—What is the common operation in which the middle line between the navel and the pubes in the seat of the scar, or about there?—The most common is an operation for diseases in the pelvis, removal of the ovaries, or removal of the uterus. Of course, it is very frequently performed in male subjects as well as on female.

What is the operation in that position which is performed on a male subject?—Removal of stones from the bladder, taking tumours from the bladder.

Then the scar there would be of the same appearance?—Yes. It would be less likely to be so wide in a male subject, because as a rule there is not so much distension. The width at the bottom would point more to a female than to a male subject.

I understood you to say that what Mr. Tobin called the *linea alba* and these tendinous depressions would be in the part of the abdominal wall behind that flesh—further in?—No, it is in the muscle which lies behind the skin.

But I understood you to say that the part which contained the tendinous intersections was not there?—Yes, there is a part of the muscle there, but the upper part of the muscle has been cut away and removed; that is to say, the part of the muscle which might have contained a tendinous intersection is not present.

It would go further into the body?—It would be higher up.

In what direction has it been sliced?—Vertically; the upper part is cut in such a way that the muscle is cut lower down than the skin.

You saw those remains first on 14th July, and you say they cannot have been in the ground longer than eight months and less than four months before then?—That is my opinion. I should have thought they might have been in the ground for eight months if I had paid attention to some parts where the decomposition or change was made more advanced, but looking at certain parts of the skin and the heart, the kidneys and the liver, I should have said that if anything they were under four months; they were so exceedingly well preserved.

Looking at all the organs together as they were, though some might indicate sufficient change—I will not use the word "decomposition"—to indicate as much as eight months, there are others that indicated it could not possibly be eight months?—Yes. Looking at the general conditions of the organs as they were, I came to the conclusion that they could not have been there more than eight months. I think I am allowing a wide margin, four to eight months.

The Court adjourned.

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

Third Day—Thursday, 20th October, 1910.

Dr. Bernard Henry Spilsbury, examined by Mr. Travers Humphreys—I am a Bachelor of Surgery of Oxford University, and I hold the position of pathologist at St. Mary's Hospital. I have on several occasions examined the piece of skin and flesh with a mark on it which was produced in Court yesterday, the first occasion on which I saw it being 9th September. I have formed the opinion that it comes from the lower part of the wall of the abdomen, near the middle. I base that opinion upon the presence and arrangement of certain muscles. There is a large mass of muscle which is the rectus muscle of the abdomen; there is a tendon on one side of that, an aponeurosis, as it has been already called, and attached to the aponeurosis are other pieces of muscle. Besides that there is a row of short, dark hairs at the lower margin of the piece, those hairs being in my opinion pubic hairs. On 9th September I was asked by Mr. Pepper to make a microscopical examination of a section taken from that piece of flesh, and I did so. The piece which I examined was about 1½ inches in length and nearly half an inch in width. The longer dimension was from across. The section that I got included a portion of the mark that has been called the scar; it was the middle part with a piece of flesh on each side. I did not find any of the outer layer of skin, the epidermis, on the surface of the mark. I found a small mass embedded deeply on the scar at one spot, which to my mind indicates the line of incision of the skin by a previous operation. I took two other pieces of skin from other parts of the same preparation, from another part of the same specimen, and in those two pieces I found glands.

In the first piece which you have mentioned did you find glands?—I found glands at each end of that specimen, on either side of what is called the scar. That piece has been cut up completely, but I have the microscopical preparations. I found no glands in the centre where there is the mark called a scar, proving in fact that mark is a scar. There were glands in the part of the skin where there is a mark or depression caused by folding. At the place where the mark or scar was the skin was denser than the rest of the skin. As the result of my microscopical examination I say that that mark is undoubtedly an old operation scar.

Cross-examined by Mr. Tobin—I commenced my studies at Oxford University, and from there I went to St. Mary's Hospital in 1894. Mr. Pepper was a lecturer there then. For the first five or six years that I was at St. Mary's Hospital I was associated with Mr. Pepper, but since then my work has been entirely independent.

Dealing with the question of the remains, must the person who removed the viscera have been a person of very considerable dexterity?—He must certainly have had considerable dexterity, yes.

And must that removal have been done by somebody with a very considerable anatomical knowledge, or somebody accustomed to eviscera-tion?—Certainly some one having considerable anatomical knowledge.

Evidence for Prosecution.

And accustomed to evisceration?—Yes, one who has done a considerable amount of evisceration.

Mr. Tobin—My lord, I do not propose to repeat at any length the cross-examination I made of Mr. Pepper yesterday.

The Lord Chief Justice—It is not in the least necessary. I think you put your points absolutely plainly and clearly, and I am sure the jury will follow them. No observation will be made because you do not repeat all that you got from Mr. Pepper. The important thing that is fresh is that this witness said that on the scar there were no glands, and that on either side there were.

Cross-examination continued—If it should be established that there is in the scar a sebaceous gland or a hair and a hair follicle, that would be conclusive that it was not a scar. I first formed the opinion that the mark in that piece of skin was a scar after I had first examined the piece of skin on 9th September. That was before the microscopical examination.

Before you formed your opinion, when you examined it with your eye, you had heard, had you not, that Belle Elmore had had an operation in the lower part of the abdomen?—Yes, I believe I had read that in the Press.

Did the condition of the skin, when you saw it for the first time on 9th September, make it very difficult to form a clear opinion as to whether this was a scar?—It made it more difficult than if it had been fresh.

Re-examined by Mr. Muir—I attended lectures by Mr. Pepper, and I also received clinical teaching from him. Otherwise I was associated with him at St. Mary's only by acting as a surgical dresser—as a student. The fact that I acted with Mr. Pepper has absolutely no influence upon the opinion that I have expressed here. The fact that I had read in the papers that there had been an operation upon Belle Elmore had no effect at all upon the opinion I have expressed. I have no doubt that this is a scar. I have also said that if any gland or hair follicle exists in that place it will conclusively prove that it is not a scar. I have examined microscopically the section which I took out to see whether there is any gland or any hair follicle in it, in the scar part of it, and I have failed to find any hair follicle or sebaceous gland in that area. If there had been any in that area I certainly would have found them.

Is there anything which might be mistaken for a gland that you saw?—There is one small mass, which I have mentioned already, of included epidermis in the scar. In a surgical operation when the edges of the skin are brought into contact it is common for at least one side to turn in a little, and, as the scar forms, some of the surface stuff covering the skin may become enclosed in the scar and embedded in it. I found such a piece of included epidermis in this mark which I say is a scar, and having found that I think there is no room for doubt as to its being a scar.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I have an independent position of my own, and I am responsible for my own opinion, which has been formed on my own scientific knowledge, and not in any way influenced by any supposed connection with Mr. Pepper. This embedding of a piece of edge of the cut would come about in the process of the healing of the scar. That

Dr. Spilsbury

embedded flesh would really be something that got in after the cut, and it might contain both follicles and sebaceous glands, so that one would have to be careful in diagnosing this to see whether one had got the cut without an embedded piece or an embedded piece in the cut. I have absolutely no doubt in my own mind as regards the scar. What I saw—the rectus muscle and the aponeurosis—is not consistent with the flesh being from any other part of the body than that which I have described. I have my microscopic slides here, and I shall send for a microscope in case it should be wanted.

Dr. Thomas Marshall, examined by Mr. Travers Humphreys—I am a Bachelor of Medicine, and I act as divisional surgeon of police for the Kentish Town district. I practise at 25 Caversham Road, Kentish Town. On 13th July I was called to 39 Hilldrop Crescent, and I got there about twenty minutes to six. I went into the cellar where Inspector Dew was, and I there saw what appeared to be human remains lying in an excavation in the centre of the cellar. At that time they were only slightly exposed. I did not touch them at all at that time. I went away, and came back again about nine o'clock in the evening, when I found the remains much more exposed. I did not disturb them, but I touched them, and picked up one or two things. I attended again at the same address on the next day, and met Mr. Pepper there. I have been in Court, and have heard Mr. Pepper's evidence as to what took place on that day, and I quite agree with it. On 15th July I had the coroner's warrant for making a post-mortem examination, and I made it in conjunction with Mr. Pepper. I have heard Mr. Pepper's evidence with regard to that also, and I quite agree with it. On that day I assisted Mr. Pepper in placing some of the remains and other matter in some jars, and, having put those matters in the jars, I sealed the jars. The stoppers of the jars were bound down with tape, and then sealed with my seal, and left in charge of the mortuary-keeper.

On 25th July I made a further examination of the remains other than those which were in the jars at the mortuary. On that occasion I found a second Hinde's curler—exhibit 46—with some hair on it. That was among the remains and the soil in the coffin. I myself took that in a further jar to Dr. Willcox at St. Mary's Hospital. In that jar I also placed a portion of the liver and some of the intestines. On 14th August I made a further examination of the remains at the mortuary, and on that occasion I found a third Hinde's curler—exhibit 47—which I put in a glass jar together with the lungs and some portion of the intestines and one or two other matters. I also on that occasion put into another jar some of the soil and lime which I took from the coffin. I took all those matters to Dr. Willcox on that day. On the same occasion I took to Dr. Willcox a box containing some carbolic powder which I got from the mortuary-keeper.

I was with Mr. Pepper on 8th August when he first saw the scar. On that day I formed the opinion that that piece of flesh which had the mark upon it came from the lower part of the abdominal wall. I formed the opinion that it was a scar mark, and that is still my opinion. I have heard

the evidence given by Mr. Pepper with regard to the condition of the various viscera. I examined these with him, and I agree with his evidence. That applies not only to the viscera, but to all the remains. I did not find any indication of disease or anything which would cause death.

Cross-examined by Mr. Tobin—Before the magistrate did you say, in cross-examination, "Some bodies remain in an excellent state of preservation for some years if buried in lime and in soil like clay, which practically excludes all air"?—I assented to that.

Do you agree that it is impossible to give any certain opinion as to the length of time that a body has been buried in the earth?—Yes, it depends upon circumstances.

Are the reasons that people are unable to give any certain opinion as to the length of time a body has been buried these, that many conditions may modify the progress of putrefaction after burial, such as the character of the soil for one thing; then the depth of the grave; then the time that has elapsed before burial, and then the cause of death?—Yes. I agree that different bodies undergo putrefactive changes with very different degrees of rapidity, even when they have been buried under similar conditions. It was on 8th August that I formed the opinion that that mark in the piece of skin and flesh was a scar. I first heard on 18th July—the date of the first inquest—that Belle Elmore had undergone an operation, but it must be remembered that the first time I scrutinised the skin and flesh was on 8th August.

You had heard twenty-five days before that that Belle Elmore had had an operation?—Yes.

Now I am going to the number of occasions on which you have seen these remains. On 13th July at Hilldrop Crescent in the cellar you first saw some remains?—Yes. I only slightly touched the top surface; I did not separate one part from another, so that there was nothing that could be called an examination on that day. I again saw the remains in the ground on 14th July; I saw them in process of being taken out and put into a shell to be taken to the mortuary. I was in the house at Hilldrop Crescent for about three hours on 14th July, while the remains were being put into the shell. I only looked into the cellar once or twice where there were men working. I made no examination of the remains then. I examined the remains for about three hours or two hours and a half on the 15th at the mortuary. Mr. Pepper was along with me examining them during the whole time.

Did you handle the remains on that day, that piece of skin and flesh with the mark on it?—I could not possibly say that I handled that. Mr. Pepper was handling them, and I was handling them; I could not say whether I handled that one specially, or whether Mr. Pepper did.

You have no doubt whatever that you looked at that piece of skin, whether you handled it with your hands or not?—Quite so.

And in that sense you examined it with the eye. Is that right?—Yes. Neither Mr. Pepper nor I used any microscope that day. During the three and a half hours' examination we looked at each piece of the remains for such time as was possible. To have microscoped or examined them in a more minute way would have taken us all night long.

Dr. Marshall

Then that piece with the mark on it did not attract your attention in any particular way?—No, not specially.

On the 18th you had heard that Mrs. Crippen had had an operation. After the 18th what was the date of your next examination of the remains?—25th July, at the mortuary. I examined them alone for one definite purpose for between two and three hours.

Did you look for that particular piece of skin with the mark on it, on that day, the 25th?—I believe not. I had a request from Dr. Willcox to supply him with certain other samples of the remains. These had to be carefully searched for, with considerable difficulty; the remains had greatly changed; they were marked, and it was a considerable task. Dr. Willcox had asked me to get for him if possible the other kidney and the remainder of the liver and a different portion of intestine. The search for the kidney entailed a long time.

Having heard on 18th July that Mrs. Crippen had had an operation, did you inform Mr. Pepper almost immediately, within a day or two, that you had heard that Mrs. Crippen had had an operation?—I think I communicated my information the first time I met Mr. Pepper after that day, but what date it might be I do not know. I did speak about the subject to him. I do not think I had seen Mr. Pepper between the 18th and 25th July; I had no occasion to see him.

The fact that you had heard on the 18th that Mrs. Crippen had had an operation would, I suppose, impress itself upon your mind? You would bear it in mind when you next examined the remains?—Certainly. The next time I examined the remains—to use the word strictly—was on 8th August.

On 18th July you have told us that you heard that Mrs. Crippen had had an operation. On 25th July you looked at the remains at Dr. Willcox's request?—Yes.

At that time I suppose you realised in your own mind that the fact that Mrs. Crippen had had an operation had an important bearing on the case?—I had realised it; oh, yes.

Why, then, did you not look on 25th July to see whether there was any trace of such an operation?—I think you do not realise the nature of the task we had to do. I had quite enough to do on that day to satisfy Dr. Willcox's request to find what he desired, and that is what I devoted my time to entirely.

Re-examined by Mr. Muir—Did the fact that you had heard that Mrs. Crippen had had an operation have any effect on the opinion that you formed as to this being a scar or not?—None whatever.

By the Lord Chief Justice—In certain cases it is very difficult to tell how long bodies have been in the ground. I formed an opinion of my own as to how long those remains had been in the ground, and I stated that opinion at the first inquest before any other witness. I formed the opinion that they had been in the ground several months. I did not consult Mr. Pepper one single word about this matter before I expressed that opinion before the coroner. I formed the opinion on two grounds, these two grounds being that on first observing those remains buried where we found them, I was somewhat surprised with an appearance

of freshness—a redness and freshness—not the appearance of corruption that might be imagined; but when I came to examine them in detail at the mortuary I found the presence of this adipocere—certain parts where there had been masses of fat, a considerable amount of adipocere, and at other parts much less. Forming an estimate to the best of my power of the time that would be required for the formation of that adipocere, I reckoned it as a matter of several months—four, five, or six, I would say. With all the knowledge I have got, the result of all my examinations, I could not say precisely how long those remains had been in the ground. All I say is that they might have been in the ground several months, up to six or possibly up to seven months.

Arthur Robinson, examined by Mr Travers Humphreys—I live at 58 Holloway Road. I was formerly a mortuary-keeper at the Islington Mortuary Chapel in Holloway Road. On 14th July last a coffin was placed in my charge at the mortuary by Mr. Leverton, the undertaker. On 15th July five glass jars, sealed, were placed in my care by Dr. Marshall. On 2nd August I handed those glass jars to the coroner's officer, Police Constable Thompson. On 19th July I put some carbolic powder upon the remains in the coffin. Afterwards I gave some of that carbolic powder to Dr. Marshall at his request.

Robert Thompson, examined by Mr. Travers Humphreys—I am a police constable, No. 520, "Y" Division. I act as coroner's officer in the Islington district. On 22nd July the last witness handed me five glass jars, which I took and handed to Dr. Willcox at St. Mary's Hospital.

Charles Pitt, examined by Mr. Travers Humphreys—I am a police constable of the Criminal Investigation Department, New Scotland Yard. On 13th July last, by direction of Chief Inspector Dew, I purchased from a chemist named Merrell a bottle of disinfectant fluid, called Neville's disinfectant fluid. That disinfectant was diluted with water, and I poured it round the walls of the cellar at 39 Hilldrop Crescent. I left the bottle with a little of the fluid in it at the house. On 16th August I went back to 39 Hilldrop Crescent, and found that bottle where I had left it, and I took it to Dr. Willcox at his request. On 15th August I purchased a full unopened bottle of the same disinfectant fluid from the same chemist, which I took unopened and handed to Dr. Willcox, also at his request.

By the Lord Chief Justice—The hole in the floor was open when I poured the stuff round the walls. The remains had not been removed.

Dr. William Henry Willcox, examined by Mr. Ingleby Oddie—I am the senior Scientific Analyst to the Home Office. I am a Bachelor of Medicine of London, a Bachelor of Science of London, a Fellow of the Royal College of Physicians, and Lecturer on Forensic Medicine at St. Mary's Hospital. On 22nd July I received five jars from the coroner's officer, Thompson. These jars were covered and sealed, and I numbered them. In the first there was a small portion of liver and one kidney; in the second, a pair of combinations;

in the third, hair in a hair curler, a handkerchief, an undervest, and some hair in a piece of paper; in the fourth, a piece of pyjama jacket; and in the fifth, two other pieces of pyjama jacket, one piece having a button on it, and the other having the neck piece on it with a tab. I have examined two complete suits of pyjamas, exhibit 76. They are composed of flannelette. The portion which was in the jars is composed of flannelette. The buttons on the jackets of the pyjamas, exhibit 76, are exactly similar to the button on the piece in the jar No. 5. This one is a little smaller, having shrunk a little. It is a circular button with a depression in the centre, from which are radiating threads. On 25th July I received another jar from Dr. Marshall, which I numbered 6, containing some intestine, another curler with hair in it, and a portion of liver. I think that that portion with the other portion which I had already got completed the whole liver. On 8th August I received from Mr. Pepper a piece of skin with the so-called scar on it. That is a piece of skin from the lower wall of the abdomen. In my opinion the mark on it is an old scar—I am of opinion that one limb of what has been described as the horse-shoe mark is a scar, and the other limb is a fold. On 14th August I received from Dr. Marshall another jar, which I numbered 7, containing some soil and lime, and a jar numbered 8 containing lungs, a portion of intestines, a piece of muscle, and another piece of hair. I also got the box of carbolic powder that has been spoken about. The lungs were in a condition of advanced putrefaction when I received them. The kidney I had got much earlier, and it was comparatively fresh, except that it had undergone the process of decay with the formation of adipocere, but there was very little ordinary putrefaction in it when I received it.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I think that the extra putrefaction of those two parts was due to the time that had elapsed since they had been taken out of the ground.

Examination continued—On 15th August I got an unopened bottle of Neville's sanitary fluid, and on the 16th an open bottle containing a small quantity. On 23rd August I visited 39 Hilldrop Crescent, and I procured some specimens of the soils from the excavation, which I put into jars Nos. 9, 10, and 11. On 23rd July I commenced examining some of the viscera for poisons. I examined the stomach, the kidney, and a portion of the liver. I first of all searched for mineral and organic poisons. I found traces of arsenic in the intestines and liver, and I found traces of creosote (the chemical name for commercial carbonic acid) in the intestines and liver, small traces. I attach no importance to those; they are due to the disinfectants used. I then commenced examining for alkaloidal poisons. I started the proceedings immediately I received the organs, but it takes some time, some two or three weeks, before one is able to apply the final tests. I took weighed portions of the stomach, intestines, kidney, and liver, and treated them by the usual process for extraction of alkaloids, with the result that I found an alkaloid present in all these extracts. I then applied further tests to see what kind of alkaloid was present. I tested for all the common alkaloids—morphia, strychnine, cocaine, and so on—and I found that a mydriatic alkaloid was present: that is, an alkaloid the solution of which, if put into the eye of an animal, causes the pupil

to enlarge and dilate. Having found a mydriatic alkaloid, I applied a further test, and found that it was a mydriatic vegetable alkaloid, of which there are three—atropine, hyoscyamin, and hyoscin. I applied further tests, and found that the alkaloid that I had got in the extracts corresponded to hyoscin. I have no doubt it was hyoscin. I could tell that in two ways, one by examining the residue with a lens and microscope; it was gummy, there were no crystals there. Another way was by adding to a solution of the residue some bromine solution—hydrobromic acid—and I got round spheres, but no crystals. Hyoscin gives spheres exactly like I have got. Atropine and hyoscyamin both give needle-shaped crystals. The two things I have described—the gummy residue and the spheres from the bromine solution—pointed to hyoscin only. In the stomach there was one-thirtieth of a grain, and in the kidney there was one-fortieth of a grain, in the intestines one-seventh of a grain, and in the liver one-twelfth of a grain.

That would be in the part you analysed?—No, calculated out of the whole organs. There was the merest trace in the lungs. The total amount of hyoscin in all the organs submitted to me was two-sevenths of a grain. Hyoscin is not used medicinally in the form of hyoscin. It is a gummy syrupy stuff, which it would be impossible to handle, and so a salt is used. The salt which is used is the hydrobromide of hyoscin; that is the preparation given in the British Pharmacopœia. In the whole of the organs submitted to me the amount of the hydrobromide of hyoscin was two-fifths of a grain, which would certainly correspond to more than half a grain in the whole body.

What is a fatal dose?—From a quarter of a grain to half a grain. Hydrobromide of hyoscin is a drug which is a powerful narcotic poison.

By the Lord Chief Justice—If the fatal dose were given it would perhaps produce a little delirium and excitement at first; the pupils of the eyes would be paralysed; the mouth and the throat would be dry, and then quickly the patient would become drowsy and unconscious and completely paralysed, and death would result in a few hours. The time when the drowsy and unconscious state would be reached would depend on the amount given and the condition of the stomach; but, assuming the dose to be given which, I think, I can trace, I should think that the drowsy, unconscious state might come on under an hour probably, and paralysis and death in something under twelve hours. The patient would not recover at all during these twelve hours if the dose was a fatal dose.

Examination continued—This is not a drug that is commonly used. If it is given internally it is practically always done by a hypodermic injection; it is given with a syringe and a solution is injected under the skin. It is used as a powerful sedative for cases of delirium, mania, and meningitis, and also for delirium tremens. Very occasionally it is used as a hypnotic for insomnia, and sometimes it is given in combination with morphia for sedative purposes. In all these cases it would be given hypodermically. It is used in tabloid form for hypodermic administration. The proper dose for a hypodermic injection is one-hundredth to one two-hundredth of a grain. As far as I know, it is not used as a homœopathic

remedy. I have looked through the English and the American pharmacopœias, and the drug is not used. I am of opinion that in this particular case this drug was taken by the mouth.

By the Lord Chief Justice—It is rather salt and bitter, and it can be administered in something with a pronounced flavour, such as stout or beer or sweetened tea or coffee, or it could be given with spirits. The sweetened liquid would disguise the bitter taste.

Examination continued—What in your opinion was the cause of death in this case?—Poisoning by hyoscin. I do not know of any legitimate internal use for hydrobromide of hyoscin, except in the doses I have mentioned.

How long do you think the patient lived after this drug was taken?—Probably an hour or more.

By the Lord Chief Justice—But what is the most you think she could have lived, having regard to what you found in the body?—I should say from one to twelve hours.

Examination continued—As regards the remains which I have examined, I should think that they had been in the ground from about four to eight months.

Cross-examined by Mr. Tobin—I have tested for hyoscin before, but I believe this is the first case where the question of murder has arisen. I have never found hyoscin in extracts from dead bodies before this case. There are several alkaloids that are mydriatic in their effect. The term "mydriatic" is applied to any drug that dilates the pupil of the eye. There are two classes of mydriatic alkaloids, some being vegetable, produced by plants, and others being animal mydriatic alkaloids, which are produced after death by the action of putrefactive bacteria without any of the elements having been introduced into the body during life. These bodies are produced fairly late in the process of putrefaction.

By the Lord Chief Justice—When the organs are much putrefied, then these bodies may be found. By "fairly late" I mean in an advanced stage of putrefaction.

Cross-examination continued—In the remains I did not discover sufficient of the alkaloid to apply what is called the melting point test. About 20th August I formed the opinion that what I had found was hyoscin.

Had you on 2nd August been informed that Dr. Crippen had bought some hyoscin?—Yes.

So that eighteen days before you formed the opinion that it was hyoscin you had been told that Dr. Crippen had bought some?—Yes, that is so. The process of ascertaining whether there is an alkaloid in a body at all is a long and elaborate process, taking about a fortnight. It is necessary to weigh the different parts of the remains where it is supposed that alkaloid might possibly be. Those are mixed up quite fine, and then placed in rectified spirits of wine. The spirits of wine is drawn off after twenty-four hours, and then what is left of the mixed up flesh is placed in another lot of spirits, which again is drawn off after another twenty-four hours, and so on as long as the liquid which comes away is coloured—about five times. When the liquid ceases to get coloured we stop. There are several other

stages in the process which I can give if desired. Finally, I found that there was an alkaloid present. Of the substance which I found in this first process to test whether there was any alkaloid at all, I found one-twelfth of a grain in the liver, one-seventh of a grain in the intestines, and one-fortieth of a grain in the kidney, calculating out on the whole of these organs. Having ascertained that there was an alkaloid, I next tested to find out whether it was mydriatic. The physiological test would be conclusive on that point, pouring a drop into an animal's eye and finding that it dilated the pupil. I put a drop of the solution into a cat's eye, and then exposed the cat to a very powerful light, and I found that one pupil was widely dilated, which was quite conclusive.

The three main vegetable mydriatics are hyoscin, hyoscyamin, and atropin. There is a fourth vegetable mydriatic, cocaine, but it is not quite the same as the other three, because if the eye is exposed to a powerful light the pupil contracts. Hyoscin and hyoscyamin are produced by the plant called henbane, and atropin is produced from belladonna, which is called the deadly night-shade. Up to a few years ago it was thought that these three vegetable mydriatics had the same chemical composition, but in the last editi .. of the British Pharmacopœia different formula was given for hyoscin, and all the recent work on these alkaloids points to the fact that hyoscin has a slightly different formula from the other two. Hyoscyamin and atropin are still the same. I believe it will be about eight years since they were discovered to be different from hyoscin. The formula for hyoscin is $C_{17}H_{21}NO_4$, and atropin and hyoscyamin $C_{17}H_{23}NO_3$. It was recognised in the profession for a number of years that the formulæ for all three were exactly the same. Putrefying bodies give off compounds containing carbon, hydrogen, and nitrogen.

Therefore, to that extent, the constituents of a vegetable mydriatic alkaloid exist in animal mydriatics?—The constituents exist, but the combination is different. In order to find out which mydriatic the alkaloid was I applied what is known as the Vitali test. That is a test by which one arrives at something which is coloured purple violet, which gradually fades away to a brownish colour.

Is the arrival at that point (violet fading away to a brownish colour) characteristic of mydriatic alkaloids, both vegetable and animal?—No, certainly not with the animal; it is with the vegetable. I am not sure that I have heard of Hamilton and Bodkin's "Legal Medicine." I have heard of Giotto and Spiecke.

Are they recognised as high authorities?—I believe they are well-known chemists.

Have you read that, according to Giotto and Spiecke, certain homatropines do give Vitali's reaction?—I have read that, but I have looked through the literature and through the work of these gentlemen, and I have been unable to find any record of it. I do not agree with that statement. Even if that statement were contained in the original papers, I do not agree with it, as it does not agree with my experience. I agree that that reaction—the violet fading to a brownish colour—is a peculiar characteristic of all three vegetable mydriatics, hyoscin, hyoscyamin, and atropin, and therefore,

Dr. Willcox

when I arrive at that violet colour fading to a brown, I must go a step further in order to ascertain which of the three vegetable mydriatics it is.

Is not the melting point test the important test in order to ascertain which of those three vegetable mydriatics you are dealing with?—It is an important test, but not the important test. It is a test which can only be applied when one has a considerable quantity of the alkaloids to deal with.

Which do you consider the most important test?—The careful observation, with a lens and a microscope, of the alkaloid itself, as to whether it is crystalline or gummy; also the bromine test, which has already been mentioned—the obtaining of crystals. From a careful observation of the alkaloid I found it to be gummy, which is characteristic of hyoscin. Gumminess is not characteristic of hyoscyamin and atropin; they are crystalline. I arrived at the gumminess when I had found out that it was an alkaloid, but before I had applied any test to find out whether the alkaloid was mydriatic; in other words, before I applied the physiological test to the cat's eye.

Then gumminess, I gather from you now, was the result of these extracts which resulted in your ascertaining that it was an alkaloid?—Yes.

Supposing that the alkaloid had, in fact, been hyoscyamin or atropin, might not gumminess have been the result, too, at that stage?—Most probably there would have been some crystals there.

But might there not, in fact, have only been gumminess?—There might possibly, but on re-crystallisation crystals would have appeared.

Might not the gumminess have possibly been hyoscyamin or atropin?—Not if the extracts were fairly pure. If the extracts were impure and had other materials in, then a gummy residue might have been obtained with atropin and hyoscyamin. I applied the bromine test after I had applied Vitali's test. The bromine test is only of value in discriminating between those three vegetable alkaloids. Other things besides hyoscin give those spheres which I have spoken of.

Would I be right in suggesting that, though the brown spheres enable you, as you say, to discriminate between which of the three vegetable mydriatics it may be, it does not enable you to say whether it may not be in fact animal?—You are quite right.

I suggest to you that the melting point test is really the most important, the clearest test of all in results, for this reason, that the melting points of the different mydriatic alkaloids are very widewly different?—The melting points is a test which it is quite impossible to apply in any toxicological investigation. If you have a sufficient quantity of alkaloid—several grains of it—then the melting point test is a very valuable one, but you can never get enough in a toxicological case to apply the test.

But if you could get enough it would be a very valuable one?—If you could get enough, but there would have to be an enormous amount taken as poison.

Will you agree that if you could get enough it would be the most valuable test of all?—No, I would not agree with that. I agree that the different mydriatic alkaloids have a melting point of widely different degrees, provided that they are in a very pure condition.

Evidence for Prosecution.

Dr. Willcox

Do you agree that the melting point of hyoscin is 65 degrees centigrade, of hyoscyamin 105 degrees, and of atropin 115 degrees?—Yes, those figures are right, except with regard to hyoscin, which is a gummy syrup, and it is very difficult to say what the melting point is. I agree that the melting point for hyoscin is lower. but it is very difficult to fix the point, because with the gummy substance one cannot tell when the point is reached. Another very important test to ascertain which mydriatic it is is a test called the conversion of alkaloid into a gold chloride compound. That conversion is effected by dissolving the alkaloid in diluted hydrochloric acid, adding a solution of chloride of gold, and allowing the product to crystallise. In that conversion process, when the different mydriatic alkaloids are converted into gold chloride compounds, the melting point of each is enormously different.

So that is, I think you will agree, the most valuable test?—It is a very valuable test if you have sufficient, but I had not sufficient. I contemplated the application of that test very seriously. If one has a sufficient quantity it is perhaps the most valuable test for discriminating between the three alkaloids. In that test the melting points are atropin, 148 degrees; hyoscyamin, 160 degrees; and hyoscin, 199 degrees.

Re-examined by Mr. Muir—The chloride of gold conversion process was the first process that I contemplated applying in the present case, but I found that I had not strong enough solutions, and that if I had applied it I should have wasted all the material unsuccessfully. The melting point test is one in which in my experience one would never receive a sufficient quantity to apply in a poisoning case where the poison was an alkaloid. For the purpose of a poisoning investigation one must by necessity use tests which apply to very small quantities.

Are the tests which you have applied in this case real tests?—Oh, yes. I tried all these tests on the pure alkaloids themselves before I applied them to extracts from the viscera, and I found them reliable, and corresponding exactly. As the result of my tests I am able to say to my own satisfaction that this substance was not an animal alkaloid. Animal mydriatic alkaloids are produced in decaying bodies at an advanced state of putrefaction. In this case the lungs were much the most putrefied of the organs; and I tested them most carefully, and I found the least trace of mydriatic alkaloid—not enough to paralyse the pupil, but just to weaken it. There was not enough to distinguish whether it was animal or vegetable in the lungs.

You were asked about this process of extraction being long and elaborate, and you said it took about a fortnight. Have you been in the habit of applying this test?—Oh, yes, a very great many times. In the last ten years I have done it considerably over a hundred times. It does not present any difficulties which I am not accustomed to deal with. I produce some specimens of the three vegetable alkaloids, marked No. 81. When you have extracted this alkaloid it is not possible to confuse in appearance the gummy residue with the crystalline residue of the other if you have a pure residue. I had a pure residue. I have never found in all my investigations an animal alkaloid which gave purple colour with the Vitali test. I have tested several hundreds of times, and recently on

some viscera several years old, and I have been unable to obtain it in any single case. I have never found one animal alkaloid to correspond to Vitali's test, and I have tested specially for that hundreds of times.

By the Lord Chief Justice—A considerable portion of my time is occupied in this kind of investigation; it is by no means a novelty to me.

You have told Mr. Tobin, very fairly, that animal alkaloids are produced in what you call the advanced stages or late stages of putrefaction. Apart from your examination, were there any organs in such a stage of putrefaction that you would expect to have alkaloids produced?—No, not those that I examined for alkaloids first. The lung, which I examined two or three weeks later, was in such a state that there might have been some animal alkaloid there. I have no doubt in my own mind that it was vegetable alkaloid that I discovered, and also that it was hyoscin.

There is a question which I am asked by the jury to put which seems to be important. You have mentioned that hyoscin in the form of hyoscin hydrobromide is in the Pharmacopœia?—Yes.

Do you know of any medicines which could be compounded by a prescription in which hyoscin hydrobromide would be given as medicine by the mouth?—No, I have never heard of it being given by the mouth. So far as I know hyoscin is not used by doctors to make up medicines which are to be taken by the mouth. The medical internal use of it is limited to hypodermic use, and then in doses such as I have described in my evidence-in-chief. I do not know of any medicine existing in which such a quantity as two-sevenths of a grain could have been used internally. If intended to be taken through the mouth, I know of no medicine in which hyoscin is used.

Dr. Arthur Pearson Luff, examined by Mr. Muir—I am a Doctor of Medicine, a Bachelor of Science of the University of London, a Fellow of the Royal College of Physicians, physician to St. Mary's Hospital, Honorary Scientific Adviser to the Home Office, and for seventeen years I was the late Sir James Stevenson's colleague as Scientific Adviser to the Home Office, which post I resigned six years ago. I have followed up Dr. Willcox's tests for hyoscin as given in evidence, and I agree that they are absolutely the right test. I have repeated all the tests recently with specimens of the pure drug, and I quite agree with Dr. Willcox that the poison that was present was undoubtedly hyoscin, judging by those tests. I have in a large number of cases tested for animal mydriatic alkaloids, but only on one occasion did I ever come across an animal mydriatic alkaloid, and that was from some excessively putrefied meat. I have for seventeen years always tested for these animal alkaloids in toxicological cases, and before that I conducted a long series of investigations upon animal alkaloids, but I have never found a mydriatic animal alkaloid in the human body. I once found it in some meat that I put to putrefy under circumstances very favourable to putrefaction. In that case I applied first of all the physiological test to the eye of a cat, and it produced dilation. I then applied Vitali's test, but it did not give the colour that the mydriatic vegetable alkaloids give. I think it is quite impossible for hyoscin to be mistaken for animal mydriatic alkaloid under the Vitali's test. And

animal alkaloid could not be mistaken for hyoscin if the Vitali's test is used. One can distinguish absolutely between the animal and vegetable.

Cross-examined by Mr. TOBIN—I wrote a book on "Forensic Medicine and Toxicology," which was published in 1895. I have been in Court all morning, and have heard the questions that were put to Dr. Marshall.

I will read from your book at page 61. "It is impossible to give any certain opinion as to the length of time a body has been buried in the earth; the reason is that many conditions may modify the progress of putrefaction after burial, such as the character of the coffin and soil, the depth of the grave, the time that has elapsed before burial, and the cause of death. In addition, different bodies undergo putrefactive changes with very different degrees of rapidity, even when they have been buried under similar conditions. For instance, three bodies were buried at the same time, side by side, wrapped in cloth of the same texture, and in coffins of the same kind of wood. In connection with one of these bodies it was found at the end of nine months that the abdominal walls had quite disappeared; in another the disappearance of the abdominal walls did not take place until an interval of thirteen months from the period of burial; in the third one, at the end of twenty-three months the abdominal walls were almost entire." That is your experience?—Yes, I wrote those lines, and I absolutely agree with them.

If a mydriatic alkaloid is produced in putrefying meat is there any scientific reason why it should not be produced in putrefying human remains?—I know of no reason, except that putrefying human remains are not exposed to the conditions, as a rule, in which I exposed that meat in order to get this mydriatic alkaloid. That is the only reason I can give. I can only say that I have never met it in human corpses.

Re-examined by Mr. MUIR—The remains in connection with this case were not shown to me.

You did not ask to have them shown to you?—Oh, no, for a very good reason.

What was the reason?—That I should never attempt to express an opinion as to the time that those remains had been buried after they had been exhumed some days; they change so rapidly. I could have given an opinion at the time the remains were moved, but not a week or ten days after. I could have formed an opinion at the time if I had seen them as Mr. Pepper did. There is nothing in that passage from my book to detract from what I now say, that I could give an opinion.

CHARLES HETHERINGTON, examined by Mr. TRAVERS HUMPHREYS—I am a qualified chemist employed by Messrs. Lewis & Burrows, chemists, 108 New Oxford Street. I know the prisoner Crippen through his coming into the shop as a customer. About 17th or 18th of January last he called and ordered five grains of hyoscin hydrobromide from me. I asked him what it was for, and as far as I remember he stated it was for homœopathic purposes. We did not have any of it in stock in the form he ordered; we only had it mixed with another substance, in this case, sugar of milk. I told him so, and he asked me to order it for him, which I did from a wholesale house called the British Drugs House,

Limited. I have been in the employ of Messrs. Lewis & Burrows for over four years, and I have never known as much as five grains of hyoscin hydrobromide to have been kept in stock there.

Cross-examined by Mr. HUNTLY JENKINS—I know Dr. Crippen quite well as a customer. I have known him since I have been at this branch, three years. He has, from time to time, purchased a number of drugs from me, sometimes cocaine, sometimes morphia, sometimes mercury and other drugs. His name and address were quite well known to me. He signed the poisons register book quite willingly. I am aware that hyoscin is generally used as a sedative in nervous cases.

Re-examined by Mr. MUIR—Have you heard the medical men in this case say what it is used for?—Only through the papers.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—I know from my own experience what it is used for. It is a narcotic and a mydriatic.

By Mr. MUIR—It is used as a sedative to produce sleep, and it is generally supplied in tabloid form. I cannot remember whether I have sold it in tabloids. That is not the form in which I sold it to Dr. Crippen. When sold in tabloid form for hypnotic purposes, I should think that the doctor would administer it to the patient.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—Do you know?—No. Dr. Crippen could not get any poison of this kind without signing the poisons register book.

One of the jurymen requests me to ask this question. Do you know of Dr. Crippen having purchased hyoscin on any other occasion from you?—No. The order of 17th January was the only one that I know of.

HAROLD KIRBY, examined by Mr. TRAVERS HUMPHREYS—I am an assistant to Messrs. Lewis & Burrows, chemists, 108 New Oxford Street. I was not in the shop on the occasion of 17th or 18th January when Dr. Crippen ordered some hyoscin, but I was in the shop on 19th January when he came to have the drug delivered to him. On that day I handed him five grains of hyoscin hydrobromide in the form of small crystals in either a tube or a box. Dr. Crippen signed the sale of poisons register, exhibit 38. The entry is dated 19th January, 1910, and is as follows:—"Name of purchaser, Munyons, per H. H. Crippen. Address of purchaser, 57-61 Albion House. Name and quantity of poison sold, five grains of hyoscin hydrobromide. Purposes for which it is required, homœopathic preparation. Signature of purchaser, H. H. Crippen." I entered the date and the name and quantity of the drug, and the rest of the entry was written by Dr. Crippen in my presence. Exhibit 49 is a list of drugs, of which we have kept a record, which have been purchased from us by Dr. Crippen—chiefly poisons.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—It is not usual for a doctor to sign the poisons book for every quantity of poison that he buys.

Examination continued—That list contains several quantities of cocaine, some of morphia, but no hyoscin. The list is as follows:—"11th February—Cocaine hydrochlor. 19th March—Hydrogen peroxide; acid hydrochlor; cocaine hydrochlor; morphia acetas. 17th March—Cocaine hydrochlor; morphia acetas. 19th April—Cocaine hydrochlor and acid hydrochlor. 16th May—Cocaine hydrochlor. 13th May—

Cocaine hydrochlor. 2nd September—Iodine, resub. 28th September—Cocaine hydrochlor."

Do you know whether cocaine is used in dentistry?—It is used in preparing an anæsthetic.

Cross-examined by Mr. HUNTLY JENKINS—I have known Dr. Crippen since about October of last year. He has bought large quantities of poison from our shop. As a rule he did not sign the poisons book. We did not require him to do so, because we knew him, and knew him as a medical man. When he signed the book for the hyoscin he did not raise the slightest objection.

WILLIAM HAYMAN, examined by Mr. MUIR—I am a detective sergeant of the Metropolitan Police at New Scotland Yard. On 18th August I went to St. Mary's Hospital and got exhibits 44, 45, 46, and 47 from Dr. Willcox. I showed those exhibits on the same day to the witness Mrs. Harrison at the hospital, and then I returned them to Dr. Willcox. I showed Mrs. Harrison also a woman's undervest that I got from Dr. Willcox. It was in a very dirty state.

Cross-examined by Mr. HUNTLY JENKINS—Before I took Mrs. Harrison to see those things I told her that she was going to see something which was found with the remains at Hilldrop Crescent.

Mrs. ADELINE HARRISON, examined by Mr. MUIR—I am a married woman living at 11 Ashmere House, Acre Lane, Brixton. I knew Cora Crippen, whose stage name was Belle Elmore, for some twelve or thirteen years. When I first knew her her hair was dark brown. The colour afterwards altered, as it was bleached. I was shown exhibits 44, 45, 46, and 47 at St. Mary's Hospital on 18th August. The hair in those exhibits resembles Mrs. Crippen's hair as I have seen it in the morning before she was dressed, before her hair was curled. I was also shown at the hospital an undervest or camisole. I have seen Mrs. Crippen dressing on several occasions. She wore an undervest similar to the one that was shown to me. It was the kind of undervest that I have seen other people wear besides Mrs. Crippen.

Cross-examined by Mr. HUNTLY JENKINS—I have known the Crippens for a number of years.

Do you agree with the other witnesses who spoke to the same effect, that Dr. Crippen was always very amiable with his wife?—Very kind, very amiable, and a very good husband.

When you looked at those jars in front of you, you knew perfectly well where they had come from?—Yes. They were the only jars that were put in front of me for identification. Mrs. Crippen was a woman who was very particular about the appearance of her hair. There is nothing to identify the Hinde's hairpin by, as such pins are very common.

With regard to the camisole, do you agree that there are a great number like that worn?—Yes, but Mrs. Crippen always wore those camisoles.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—I think Mrs. Crippen dyed her hair about six or seven years after I knew her, and after that she always had

Adeline Harrison

her hair bleached. She used to wear golden curls. She told me that Dr. Crippen bleached her hair in the first instance. When her hair was down in the morning one could see the original colour on the part nearest the roots.

Mr. Muir—That, my lord, is the case for the Crown.

Opening Speech for the Defence.

Mr. Tobin opened the case for the defence by saying that the moment he sat down Dr. Crippen would go into the witness-box and tell his tale. He would be followed by medical men of good positions and the highest qualifications, who would speak on the length of time the remains might have been buried. They would criticise the evidence for the Crown and discuss whether the piece of skin came from the abdomen of any person at all. One of them was a man of the highest reputation as a microscopic expert in the medical profession, and he and others would give conclusive reasons why the mark on the piece of skin was not a scar at all. If there were doubt as to whether the piece of skin came from any one's abdomen, and if there were doubt as to whether it were a scar or no, then it afforded no evidence whatever that the remains were those of Belle Elmore. They would be followed by an expert in poisons of high reputation, who would give them his reasons why the alkaloid found in the remains might not have been a vegetable alkaloid introduced into the body during life, but an animal alkaloid produced by the ordinary process of putrefaction in a dead body. He had carefully considered what was best in the interests of his client to do, and he had come to the conclusion that at this stage he should deal at length with the evidence which had been given for the Crown, and that he should outline quite shortly afterwards the evidence that he would lay before the jury. He promised that at the end of the case, when the evidence had all been given, he would not occupy their time by any lengthy speech, because he meant to deal with the matter once and for all.

Anxious, indeed, as must be the task of any man engaged in the defence of a fellow-man upon his trial for life, it must be rendered a thousand times more anxious when for weeks and months the columns of the Press had been filled by discussions of the case and gossipy details, some of which might be true and some false. Every man and woman in the land had discussed this case, and the danger of it was that they only partially knew the facts. All that publicity to gratify the public taste must be fraught with a grave danger to the administration of justice, because it was human nature that the man who read these columns should inevitably take a view regarding Dr. Crippen before his trial. They knew how difficult it was to wipe the slate clean, and to approach the case with an absolutely open mind. He knew, however, that the jury were determined, so far as their will power would enable them, to do their best to try this case in an unbiassed and absolutely unprejudiced way. Had

the Crown proved beyond all reasonable doubt that the remains found in the cellar were the remains of a woman at all? Had the Crown proved that they were the remains of Belle Elmore? Never mind what their suspicions might be; they must prove beyond all doubt that those remains were the remains of a woman, and those of Belle Elmore, or else the prisoner was entitled as a right to be acquitted.

The first outstanding feature in the evidence was Dr. Crippen's reputation amongst those who knew him best and had known him for long years. From every witness who had known him came the same tale; these were the characteristics in the very words the witnesses had used—"amiable," "kind-hearted," "good-hearted," "good-tempered," "one of the nicest men I ever met." The people who gave him that character were people of different ages, of different interests, and of both sexes. Could the jury say that that reputation was not deservedly earned? Yet it was openly suggested that a man with those characteristics suddenly became a fiend incarnate. And for what motive Did they believe, if he deserved that reputation, that he would have killed his wife and hacked the body to pieces for the suggested money motive? Crippen was not in debt, and he could not draw a single farthing from the deposit account in the Charing Cross Bank until after twelve months' notice. Notice had been given by Belle Elmore in December of last year, but were they to be told that, in order to get money in December, 1910, he murdered his wife eleven months before? He did not forget that the death of his wife, if brought about by Dr. Crippen, would perhaps have rendered the household less expensive; but was that an adequate motive for a crime like this? The Crown would not suggest any other motive, but he must deal with all possible ones. Could it be said that he murdered his wife in order to marry his mistress? He did not fly from the country with his mistress until the month of July. He had never married her, and surely that could not be a motive. It was suggested that this man criminally abused the skill and dexterity of a surgeon and a man well versed in anatomy, and removed all trace of sex, the head, the hands, the feet, and the bones. Had he that dexterity? He did not practice in anatomy; he had never conducted a post-mortem in his life; he knew nothing of anatomy or operations except what he had learned in his student days long years ago.

His manner at the time of the alleged murder, and for months afterwards, could not be wiped aside. Just before the wife's disappearance, and for months afterwards, he showed no sign of agitation, no sign of fright, no seeking to avoid his friends and his wife's friends. Dr. Crippen showed no signs of constraint at the dinner party on 31st January, and yet it was suggested that he was shortly to give the poison he had bought some twelve days before to the woman who was sitting at the other end of the table. The next day he went to work as usual, having, it was suggested by the Crown, murdered his wife and left her body in the house alone. He could not have got rid of the bones, the head, the hands, and the feet, and buried the flesh in the few short hours between 1.30 a.m. and his going to his work next morning. What murderer

would run the risk of leaving the body behind like that? On the same day he called upon Mrs. Martinetti and told her that his wife was all right; and so he believed her to be, because he had left her at home all right. At the very time that he was going about his business and calling on his friends as usual, showing no sign of terror, if he was the murderer, he was cutting up the body in his house, and carrying away the remains piecemeal. It was said that he had the night-time to do these things in. Was it conceivable that he could have done that without somebody noticing something? Could he have spent the long hours through the night at home after his work doing things like that, without any trace being visible on his face when he went to his work at the usual hours day by day? It was suggested that he took Le Neve to live over the remains of the wife he had murdered. Did they believe that if he had murdered his wife, and recently buried her remains in his cellar, he would have left his house for those days when he took Le Neve to Dieppe? There was no proof whatever that he had ever had a surgical knife; there was no trace of blood found anywhere in the house; as regards the suggestion that he buried the remains, no pickaxe to get out the bricks had been traced; and there was no proof of the purchase of any lime by him

Belle Elmore disappeared after 1.30 in the early morning of 1st February —disappeared as far as the world knew, except, of course, her husband, who said that he saw her in the house after breakfast when he left her on 1st February. Since then Belle Elmore had gone out of his life, as she had threatened many times that she would. It was a strange thing, but strange things happened at all times, and would happen again to the end of time.

The jury had to consider and say to themselves, had the Crown discharged the burden cast upon it in every criminal case, and all the more serious a burden in a case of life and death? They had to consider, in connection with the disappearance of Belle Elmore, who she was, what she had been, her characteristics, what was her life at home with Crippen. Belle Elmore was the daughter of a Pole. Eighteen years ago, in 1892, she married Dr. Crippen in America. She was nineteen then; he was thirty, roughly speaking. The jury would believe him that he did not wish to cast a stone at Belle Elmore. But it was a thing they could not and ought not to forget that she had been living under the protection of some one in New York at the time she married him, and he knew it. After their marriage they came to London and lived in London. Then, as they knew, there came a time when Belle Elmore remained behind, and Dr. Crippen went to America to become manager of Munyons. When Dr. Crippen returned to England and joined his wife again he found her manner wholly changed. Her temper was quite ungovernable, her love had gone. He found what they now knew to be a fact, that Bruce Miller, then a music hall artist, had been repeatedly visiting his wife. He saw and read letters from Bruce Miller to his wife written to her while Dr. Crippen was in America, and of which at that time he knew nothing. Those letters enabled counsel to put the question to Bruce Miller, "Did you not write affectionate letters with the words 'Love and kisses to Brown Eyes'"? Bruce Miller admitted that he wrote such letters. He

Opening Speech for the Defence.

further admitted that he had often kissed Mrs. Crippen. "Under the circumstances," Bruce Miller said, "I thought there was no impropriety in writing those letters and kissing her." Under the circumstances! The husband was away and knew nothing of it. What inference did they draw from those admissions of Bruce Miller? Love letters, kisses, husband absent, and after the husband came back to England frequent visits by Bruce Miller to Belle Elmore. He never went there to her whilst Crippen was present. Since then the relations of husband and wife between Dr. Crippen and his wife did not continue. They did not sleep together. Then there came, perhaps not unnaturally, an intimacy on the part of Crippen with somebody else, and Le Neve became his mistress. They had to take all these things into consideration. Before their friends, it was true, Crippen and his wife appeared to be cordial in their relations. There was, however, one little matter bearing on those relations. Dr. Burroughs told them he had noticed that Belle Elmore was hasty in temper towards her husband. She had threatened over and over again after the intimacy with Bruce Miller had been found out by Dr. Crippen, and after the quarrels she had had with him, that she would leave him and go out of his life. Time after time the thing blew over. It was simply a cry of "wolf," and nothing came of it. At last, however, the threats which she had so often made were carried out, and at last she did go out of his life.

The position, therefore, was this. There was an illicit intimacy between Mrs. Crippen and Bruce Miller, and an illicit intimacy between Crippen and Le Neve—the latter might be another reason for Mrs. Crippen's departure. Where was she now? Why did she go? She went because she had long disliked Crippen, and her dislike had turned to hate. Who knew where Belle Elmore was? Who knew whether it was Belle Elmore's flesh that was buried in the cellar? Who knew for a certainty whether Belle Elmore was alive to-day or not? Who knew for certain whether she was abroad, whether she was ill or well, alive or dead? In a case of life and death, and in a charge of murder, they had to know, to know beyond all reasonable doubt, before they could find a verdict that would send a fellow-man to death. It was not enough that they should suspect. The law said that beyond all reasonable doubt they had to know.

Mr. Tobin, continuing the narrative of events, said, after the Martinettis had left the house at 1.30 a.m. on 31st January the fault-finding wife, Mrs. Crippen, for the paltry cause that Mr. Martinetti had been under the doctor's orders, and the window had been left open, worked herself up, with an ungovernable temper, as women did, and men, he supposed, did likewise. It was the old story again, "I will stand this no longer: this is the finish. I will leave you to-morrow. You will never see me again." But she added on this occasion, with meaning in her voice, "This time I mean to go. Cover up the scandal in the best way you can." It was a small cause, but a small spark caused, they knew, a forest fire. The result might well be tremendous, and so he suggested it was in this case. The cause was obvious—the quarrel after the Martinettis had left in the early morning. There had been many such quarrels. Crippen got up in the morning, thinking no more of it.

He went off, leaving his wife at home, expecting to find her at home on his return. He went to work in the usual way. There was the natural call on the Martinettis during lunch time; he did not attach sufficient importance to the incident of the quarrel to refer to it. He did not see any reason for washing dirty linen, and to Mrs. Martinetti's inquiry he said his wife was well.

Then he went home in the evening, only to find that she was gone, and he recalled the words which she had added for the first time to her old and oft-repeated quarrels, "This time I mean it. Cover up the scandal in the best way you can." Thereupon he foolishly embarked upon (as Mr. Muir aptly described it) a campaign of lies to cover up the scandal —to carry out his wife's wishes. "Avert the scandal among our friends in the best way you can." And so on the evening of 1st February Crippen invented the lie, to explain her absence, that she had been called away to America on business and to see her friends. So he wrote two letters, one to the committee and the other to the secretary of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild. If the Lord Chief Justice thought proper they should see those letters. Both were written in an undisguised hand. The one signed "Belle Elmore, p.p. H.H.C.," showed, of course, that the hand which wrote it was "H.H.C.," not Belle Elmore. There was no disguise whatever about the writing in the letters tendering excuses. Of course, the lies had to go on. He need not deal with that part of the case. A cable came on Tuesday night, 1st February, saying she had gone to California to see a relation who was ill. To cover up the scandal and in order to account for her absence, when she did not return as the days passed, the lies that he had told had necessarily to be developed to account for her non-return. Therefore there came the lie that she was ill with pneumonia, then that she had become worse. And when he realised that she would not return—that she had carried out the threat she had made—in order effectively to stop any talk among neighbours and friends and intimates, the lie was invented that she was dead. Then, of course, in pursuance of the policy he had adopted, he had to say to friends who asked for the address where she died, "I can't and won't give you the address. Her ashes are to be cremated and sent over here." The whole story was invented to cover up the scandal.

It was said he pawned her jewellery and gave away her clothes, and therefore must have known she was dead. It would be idle to pretend that when she went Crippen was overwhelmed with grief. Not at all. They had not been on good terms at home. Under those circumstances he was not in the least keen or anxious to find out where she had gone. He was not grieved—he was not concerned to advertise in the papers to inquire from any of her relatives in America or elsewhere where she had gone. He had his mistress, Miss Le Neve—who had been his mistress for some few years—and in those circumstances Dr. Crippen saw no impropriety whatever in giving to his mistress his wife's jewels and furs, and in pawning others. He had earned the money; he had paid for the things. No inference adverse to the prisoner was to be drawn from that. It was all done openly. The jewellery was worn by Miss Le Neve at the ball which people who knew his wife were sure to attend.

Opening Speech for the Defence.

Such things as he pawned he pawned openly at a pawnbroker's where he had been before, and where his name and address were known. He did not go to a pawnbroker who did not know him, where he might have given a false address. He pawned them in his own true name. There was no secrecy about it. He saw no harm in it at all.

He passed on to 8th July and the arrival of Mr. Dew and Miss Le Neve at Albion House. Mr. Dew said he was not at all satisfied about the matter, and there was instant readiness on the part of Dr. Crippen to answer any question, and he made a long statement giving the details of the quarrel, much the same as he had described it just now, guessing that she had gone away with Bruce Miller, but not knowing with whom she had gone, in fact. It was not suggested now, of course, that she had gone with Bruce Miller. He was going to suggest that before he put the question to Bruce Miller. But it did suggest itself at the time that she had gone off with Bruce Miller, with whom she had been on very affectionate terms. To say that he pawned all his wife's things was untrue. It was an inaccurate thing to say, but he did it to cover up a scandal. They would remember the words in the statement, "I invite you to look round my house in Hilldrop Crescent, and to do whatever you like in it." Here was a supposed murderer readily and willingly going with the chief inspector to the house where, if he were the murderer, he knew that part of his wife's remains were buried. He went into all the rooms with Dew, and they went into the cellar together. If he were a murderer, if he had buried those remains in the cellar, he knew the spot in the middle of the cellar, there under his very eye as he stood there! Yet he never turned a hair, never showed the slightest sign of agitation, or fear, or terror. Was it possible that he was the murderer and was standing within three feet of the hole where his own hand must have put the remains if he was the murderer? Was it not beyond all powers of belief? Let the jury remember that on 8th July, at Albion House, a representative of the law had said to him at Hilldrop Crescent the same evening, "Crippen, I must find your wife." With those words ringing in his ears picture what Crippen's thoughts must have been. Crippen must have realised that the lies he had told to cover up the scandal, the lies he had in his folly told, must have raised a mountain of prejudice, and formed clouds of suspicion which it would be for him to dispel. During the night he wondered how he could remove that mountain of prejudice and dispel those clouds.

So he resolved to do what hundreds of men had done before. Feeling there was that high mountain of prejudice which he had erected by his lies against himself, he did what innocent men, threatened with a charge, have done before. He resolved in his folly to fly. Experience taught that the very threat of any criminal charge often made good, strong men take their own lives. He did not do that, or attempt it, but in his folly he resolved to fly. What more natural than that he should take with him his mistress? The rest followed as a matter of course—the disguise, the shaving of his moustache, the dressing of Le Neve in boy's clothes. He went away from the inquiries of the officer as innocent men had fled before. For the reason that he had decided to fly, the adver-

tisement drafted by him in the presence of Inspector Dew was not inserted in the papers at all, because he ran away the next day, 9th July.

He came now to what happened in the "Montrose" on the day of the arrests, 31st July. Was the statement, "I am sorry; the anxiety has been too much for me," which he then made, to weigh with the jury for a single instant when they considered their verdict? That, he ventured to submit, ought not to be a factor which they would weigh at all. What under the circumstances did the expression mean? Only this: "Anxious, indeed, have I been, because ever since 8th July Chief Inspector Dew has had his suspicions, and I realise what suspicions have been aroused by the lies I have told, and that I cannot point out where Belle Elmore is."

Here counsel read the two cards which were found upon Crippen at the time of his arrest, which were in Crippen's handwriting. Referring to one of the cards upon Crippen, "I have made up my mind to jump overboard to-night," counsel said the Crown suggested that the wording on the card indicated the remorse of a guilty man and his determination to jump overboard and commit suicide. Hitherto they had been asked to say these cards implied guilt. The long one, on the face of it, was apparently intended for Miss Le Neve, because it ended, "I have spoilt your life, and with last words of love.—H." So that up till now the idea not unnaturally would be in the minds of the jury about these cards, "The guilty man resolves to take away his life." But these cards were not written for the eye of Miss Le Neve at all. They were not written to convey to Miss Le Neve his intention to commit suicide. There would be no necessity to write those cards to Miss Le Neve, because they were together, occupying the same cabin. There must be some other reason.

It was clear from Chief Inspector Dew's evidence that these two cards were written before Dew's arrival on board, and the explanation why they were written was this. They were both written in pursuance of a plot to enable Crippen to get hidden and smuggled ashore to escape up country, and there be afterwards joined by Le Neve when everything had blown over. Two days before the arrest Crippen had learned from the quartermaster that he (Dr. Crippen) was to be arrested on landing at Quebec. There was then no question of Miss Le Neve's arrest at all. He expected that he (Crippen) was alone to be arrested on landing at Quebec, and the quartermaster was persuaded, or pretended to be persuaded, to believe that Crippen was entirely innocent. The quartermaster at any rate pretended to be satisfied. That quartermaster would be the man who would be in charge of the unloading of the cargo at Quebec, where passengers would disembark and cargo be landed; and it was arranged that just before the vessel reached Quebec Crippen was to be concealed amongst the cargo in the ship, and that the longer card was to be found in his cabin indicating to those who found it that Crippen had jumped overboard from this vessel, the object being that there should be no strenuous search on board the ship while Crippen was hidden in the cargo; because one could well believe in the circumstances that the police might readily think and suspect what was wrong. Whether the quartermaster was a guilty participator, or only pretended to be, did not matter. The quartermaster, while supervising

the landing of the cargo at Quebec, could readily smuggle Crippen through, and by that time it was hoped by Crippen that if the police had found the card indicating that he had jumped overboard they would have gone off and have ceased to maintain a watch upon the river. He then hoped to go up country, where Miss Le Neve, after all trouble had blown over, was to reach him. And was not that borne out by the shorter card, "Shall we wait until to-night about ten or eleven o'clock"? That shorter card was meant to be given to the quartermaster some few hours before the police came on board, and "ten or eleven o'clock" meant that he intended to be smuggled ashore about that time. Why, then, was it not handed to the quartermaster? He (counsel) had elicited from Chief Inspector Dew that the boat was not intended to land cargo or passengers at Father Point. She passed Father Point about sixteen hours before she should arrive at Quebec. At some time or other during those sixteen hours it was intended that that card should be handed to the quartermaster, and it was not given to him because the arrest took place long before Crippen imagined there was any danger. The jury had to ask whether that explanation was true. If it was not, where was the need of writing those two cards for Miss Le Neve to read, when at any moment, whenever he chose, he was able to speak to her in the cabin alone without anybody overhearing?

He had dealt now with the general aspect of the case, and had only got to say a few words more upon the facts bearing on the medical aspect. The jury had to be satisfied as to the sex of the remains. Could the jury on the evidence—he cared not what they suspected, because suspicion was not enough—be satisfied, first of all, beyond all reasonable doubt whether those remains were the remains of a man or a woman? If they had any doubt about that, Crippen by law was entitled to a verdict of not guilty. Taking those remains by themselves, the witnesses for the Crown had admitted that it was impossible to say on anatomical grounds whether they were the remains of a man or a woman. Those grounds did not exist. Taking it by itself, the piece of skin might be that of a man. Who could tell? And it was a matter of life and death. If that mark on that piece of skin were the mark of an operation—and that he disputed—why should it not be the result of an operation on a man? Taking those remains by themselves, was he wrong in pressing strongly the claim that there ought to be the gravest doubt as to whether those were the remains of a man or woman? If there was that doubt, the Crown had not discharged the burden cast upon it. The clothing found with the remains formed no evidence whatever as to the sex of those remains, and as to whether they were those of a male or a female. The clothing, then, left the matter absolutely open.

Passing to the question of Crippen's anatomical knowledge, counsel reminded the jury that Crippen, as a doctor, took his degree in the States, and admitted to Dew on 8th July that in his early student days he attended operations at London hospitals. But during those years he lived in London what was his practice? If Crippen had gone in for anatomical work or had practised surgery, the Crown, with their resources, would have found it out and given evidence of the fact. They found that, far from that, he was connected with Munyons for many years. This was not the kind of position that afforded a man the opportunity of practising anatomical work. The

Mr. Tobin

prisoner would tell them that he never performed an operation in his life, never dissected a body. It was clear from the evidence of Mr. Pepper and Mr. Spilsbury that the hand which dissected the body, whoever it was, the remains of which were found in the hole in the cellar, must have been accustomed to evisceration. The man whose hands did this gruesome work must have been possessed of considerable anatomical knowledge. The jury were entitled to apply their knowledge of the world as to what kind of man it must have been who cut up those remains. Was it possible that the work could have been done with so much skill by a man who had never done that work as part of his practice during the whole of his professional work?

On the question of identification, the jury had to be satisfied that those remains were put into that hole in the cellar after 31st January; otherwise there was no case against the prisoner at the bar. In this most difficult, anxious case, trying it with all the ability and fairness which the jury were showing, could they say honestly, bearing in mind the result of an adverse verdict, were they able to say in their souls anything beyond this: we suspect, we guess? If they could not say with certainty that those remains were put into the hole after 31st of January, there was no case against the prisoner. He reminded them of what Mr. Pepper said, that it was not "within the reach of science to determine from its putrefaction the date of death." How, then, in this matter of doubt could they do more than suspect? Better a hundred guilty men should go free than one innocent man should suffer. If the remains had been there for years there was nothing to induce suspicion in the tenant of the house.

He submitted there was the gravest doubt as to what part of the body the marked piece of skin and flesh came from, and whether any part of the depression upon it could be a scar. If there was no scar, it would not be from Belle Elmore's body. He did not forget the reasons that the witnesses for the Crown gave for saying that the flesh came from the lower part of the abdomen; but, on the other hand, there were characteristics admittedly absent whose presence would have made the matter absolutely clear. There were not the tendinous intersections crossing from the navel and those which generally existed below the navel; and there was not the white vertical line from the chest downwards where the tendons united.

But if they were satisfied that the piece came from the lower part of the abdomen, they had still to decide whether any part of the depression was the scar of an operation. Mr. Pepper agreed that one side of the depression was due to a folding of the piece of skin. The other side was a scar. His case was that both sides were the result of folding and pressure. That there was considerable pressure must be clear, as there was imprinted on the skin the pattern of some material placed in the hole with the remains. If the depression was admittedly caused by such pressure on one side, why not upon the other? Was this not far too doubtful a matter for them to say that they were clear beyond doubt that this depression was a scar? He had no desire to dwell on the number of opportunities the doctors for the Crown had of seeing these remains, but it was perhaps unfortunate—and he conveyed no imputation in what he was saying—that long before they found that so-called scar on 8th August they had heard that Belle Elmore had had an operation. Might not an opinion as to whether there was a

Opening Speech for the Defence.

scar or not quite unwittingly be influenced by the information that Belle Elmore had in fact undergone an operation? In Mr. Crippen's opinion, the navel was originally upon that piece of skin, and was removed by operation. Well, so far from there having been a removal of the navel, Mr. Crippen, Mrs. Martinetti said that once, when she was visiting them in the bungalow, she saw the mark on the lower part of the abdomen going up as far as the navel. He put it clearly to Mrs. Martinetti, "Are you sure that you saw the navel itself?—Yes, quite sure." The jury must not let that fact escape them. If Mrs. Martinetti saw the navel, the operation Mrs. Crippen underwent was not one which involved the removal of the navel, and this piece of skin was not Belle Elmore's.

He came now to the last point, the poison. On 17th January Dr. Crippen ordered, and on 19th January he obtained, five grains of hyoscin hydrobromide. He need not have signed the poisons book at all, but openly he left the record of his purchase and his name at a shop where he was known. He bought it to reduce it to a liquid, and to use it in the tiny tabloids he prepared for patients. Doctors did not seem to use hyoscin in England, but he supposed that American ways were different from ours. Dr. Crippen did use it. He had little bottles, each containing about three hundred of these tabloids, all ready for being impregnated with different kinds of drugs. Three hundred tabloids sounded a good deal, but as the dose was sixteen tabloids a day, the bottle would just last twenty days. That was the way he used the drug after he had bought it, and that was the way he continued to use it after Belle Elmore disappeared. Was the alkaloid found in the remains hyoscin? Dr. Willcox said there was not enough of it to use what he said would be the most certain test of all to ascertain which mydriatic vegetable alkaloid it was. As he did not apply this test, he asked the jury to say that the matter remained in far too much doubt whether, even if this was a vegetable alkaloid at all, it was hyoscin rather than hyoscyamin or atropine. He would go further and ask the jury to say that there was not enough to enable a man to determine whether the alkaloid found in the body was vegetable, introduced during life, or animal, produced after death by the natural process of putrefaction.

He had attempted no eloquent appeal on behalf of the prisoner. It was better to confine oneself simply and solely to the facts, and on those facts he asked them to say they were not satisfied that the Crown had beyond all reasonable doubt demonstrated that these remains were the remains of a woman at all, and still less had identified these remains as part of the body of Belle Elmore.

Evidence for the Defence.

Hawley Harvey Crippen (prisoner, on oath), examined by Mr. Huntly Jenkins—I am forty-eight years old. I am an American by birth. I am a doctor of medicine of the Cleveland Homœopathic Hospital in the United States of America. I went through a theoretical course of surgery. I have never gone through a practical course of surgery, and

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

I have never performed a post-mortem examination in my life. I have made the eye my special subject, and also the ear, nose, and throat. I have been twice married. My second wife gave me Cora Turner as her name when I first met her in Brooklyn. I afterwards found that her real name was Mackamotzki. When I first met her she was living under the protection of a man by the name of C. C. Lincoln. She had never had any children to my knowledge. I believe she had had some miscarriage, or something of that kind, because she was being attended to by the man I was assistant to for some trouble. She never had any children by me. I cannot give the exact date when I married her, but it was about 1892, about seventeen years ago. After our marriage we lived first of all in St. Louis. I came to this country for the first time after I married her in April, about twelve years ago, and she followed me in August. Our first apartments were in South Crescent, which is now pulled down and turned into a big boarding-house for the people that Hollingsworths' employ, I believe, just off Tottenham Court Road. I think we lived there for about close on a year. We went to live in Hilldrop Crescent about 1905, about five years ago. We had moved from South Crescent to Guildford Street, and from there to Store Street, and from there to Hilldrop Crescent. While we were living in Guildford Street I paid a visit to America. I think I was away from November, 1899, to April, 1900. I left my wife in a boarding-house in Guildford Street.

Up to the time you paid that visit to America, had you lived on friendly terms with your wife?—Yes, except that she was always rather hasty in her temper.

I mean, you lived in strict relationship as husband and wife?—Yes. The time I referred to in my statement that I made to Inspector Dew—the time that I referred to her coming over from America and saying that she had met some fine men on board—was the first time she came over; that was previous to this. Until I returned from my visit to America we had always lived on friendly terms. Coming back from America I joined my wife at Guildford Street. I did not notice any change in her manner at first. Soon after that we moved to Store Street, and then I began to notice a change. She was always finding fault with me, and every night she took some opportunity of quarrelling with me, so that we went to bed in rather a temper with each other. A little later on, after I found that this continued and she apparently did not wish to be familiar with me, I asked her what the matter was. She told me then that she had met Bruce Miller, and that he had been taking her out while I was away, and that she had got very fond of him, and that she did not care for me any more.

By the Lord Chief Justice—This is 1900, is it?—No, I think that would be 1904.

Examination continued—It was before we moved to Hilldrop Crescent; it was between 1903 and 1904. I should say it would be, say, six months after my return from America, but I do not like to be certain about these dates, because it is such a long time ago. I think we lived in Store Street about a couple of years, and then, in 1905, we went to Hilldrop

Evidence for Defence.

Crescent. It would be between 1902 and 1903 that we moved from Guildford Street to Store Street.

I just want to get this clear before the jury. How long after your return from America did you notice this change in your wife's manner?—About six or seven months. I noticed the change beginning right away, but it was about six or seven months afterwards that I found out what the trouble was. She told me that Bruce Miller was a music-hall artist, that he had some sort of automatic orchestra. She told me that he was still in town, and he came to visit her at times. I never met Mr. Bruce Miller. I told my wife I thought it was very strange, although I had seen this coming for a long time, for a previous trouble we had had before I moved away from South Crescent. I still lived with her—not as my wife, but I still lived with her. We occupied the same bed until we moved to Hilldrop Crescent. That was one of the reasons why we moved there, because when we lived in Store Street we could only have the one sleeping room. At Hilldrop Crescent we had separate rooms.

Before your friends, and before strangers as well, what was your demeanour towards your wife and hers towards you?—It was always agreed that we should treat each other as if there had never been any trouble. Of course, I hoped that she would give up this idea of hers at some time. I first became connected with Munyons about sixteen years ago. I was first in a position in their employ, and afterwards I became the general manager. When I was general manager I acted as advisory physician, and had charge of the chemical laboratory besides. I should say that I was in that capacity for about five or six years. I came over to this country for Munyons, then I went back to America and stayed there until the time I have mentioned, and my services then ceased.

By the Lord Chief Justice—The last time I was in America was about 1901 or 1902. That is the time I am speaking of when I say that I was there from November to April or May.

Examination continued—I have been in the habit of purchasing drugs. I always made up their prescription for them when I was in America. I have been in the habit of purchasing drugs in this country—not for them, but for myself, and also for the other firms that I have been with. Among drugs that I have purchased I have purchased considerable amounts of different poisons—aconite, belladonna, rhus tox., gelsemium, and also those on the list that I got from Lewis & Burrows. The homœopathic drugs I have already mentioned I purchased from Ashtons. Those are the only two chemists from whom I have been in the habit of purchasing drugs. I have for years been familiar with the drug hyoscin. I first heard of it when I came over to England in 1885; I learned the use of it in the Royal Bethlem Hospital for the Insane. It is used a very great deal in America, especially in insane asylums: it is also used in ophthalmic clinics. I have used it as a nerve remedy in a homœopathic preparation, that is, reduced to extremely minute doses. I remember purchasing some hyoscin on 19th January.

Had you ever used hyoscin before?—Yes.

I mean in this country?—No, not in this country. I purchased it for treating nervous diseases, nerve cases. It was sold to me in the form of

crystals. I then dissolved it in alcohol, and then I dissolved 5 grains in an ounce of water, that is, in 480 drops, giving to one drop 5/480ths of a grain. I used four drops of this, which would equal 20/480ths or 0·041 of a grain, in conjunction with another mixture consisting of gelsemium, assafœtida, and some other homœopathic preparation. This, with a drachm of the other mixture, I used for medicating 300 small discs to make one bottle of a preparation sent to each patient; that would be about 150 doses; two tablets a dose would equal 1/3600ths of a grain as a dose. The bottles would be labelled with the dose, and packed in a little heavy pasteboard case. The dose would be in the form of small sugared discs. A dose would consist of two discs, and the actual dose would be approximately 1/3600ths of a grain, extremely minute. That is what I did with this hyoscin that I purchased. I think I dispensed about two-thirds of the hyoscin that I purchased on 19th January. I might mention that, besides using it for nerve cases, I also found it useful for spasmodic coughs and spasmodic asthma.

At the time you purchased it can you recollect any particular person that you required it for?—Well, besides my business of Munyons, I had also another business in which I handled about two hundred letters—it is extremely difficult to remember names. I think I can remember one. Sweeney—no, M'Sweeney. I remember the dinner party of 31st January. My wife had very frequently threatened to leave me before that time.

At the time she threatened to leave you, would she be in a calm temper or in a rage?—In a rage.

Generally speaking, were the tempers that she got in for trivial matters or something serious?—Very trivial matters; she was always finding fault about trivial things. On 31st January Mr. and Mrs. Martinetti came to dinner with us, arriving somewhere between six and seven o'clock. I had taken them an invitation on behalf of my wife.

While they were with you did anything take place which upset your wife?—Yes, Mr. Martinetti wanted to go upstairs, and, as I thought he knew the house perfectly well, having been there many times during eighteen months, I thought it was quite all right that he should go up himself. When he came down he seemed to have caught a chill, and after they went away I was blamed for not going up with him. They left somewhere between one and two o'clock, I think; I know I had a lot of trouble to find a carriage for them. Immediately after they had left my wife got into a very great rage with me, and blamed me for not having gone upstairs with Mr. Martinetti. She said a great many things—I do not recollect them all—she abused me, and said some pretty strong words to me; she said she had had about enough of this—that if I could not be a gentleman she would not stand it any longer, and she was going to leave me. She also said something that she had not said before—that after she had gone it would be necessary to cover up any scandal that there might be by her leaving me, and I might do it the very best way I could.

As a matter of fact, did you find that she had gone?—When I came home the next day—I came home about half-past seven, my usual time for coming home——

By the Lord Chief Justice—This is very important. I understand

Evidence for Defence.

you have told us all that took place on the night of the 31st?—That is as near as I recollect.

Examination continued—Then you know nothing more until you came home on the evening of the 1st and found she had gone, is that right?—That is right. I did not even see her the next morning. We retired very late, and it was the usual thing that I was the first one up and out of the house before she was ever up at all. On 1st February I went to business as usual, and I returned to the house about half-past seven. I went to see Mrs. Martinetti some time during that day, as I was anxious about the chill that Mr. Martinetti had caught. The conversation that Mrs. Martinetti has related took place between her and me. I asked how Paul was, and she asked how Belle was. On returning home about half-past seven that night I found that the house was vacant. I have heard the evidence of Mrs. Martinetti, Miss May, Mrs. Smythson, Miss Curnow, my landlord, and Dr. Burroughs, to the effect that I said that my wife had left me, that she afterwards became ill, and that subsequently her death took place. I admit all that.

Were those statements true or false?—The statements that I made were false.

Why did you make those statements?—She told me I must do the best I could to cover up the scandal, and I made those statements for that reason; I wanted to hide anything regarding her departure from me the best I could, both for my sake and for hers. I recollect Inspector Dew coming to my office and my making a statement to him.

Was the statement that you made to Inspector Dew a false or a true statement?—It was quite true. Inspector Dew was very imperative in pressing upon me that I must produce my wife, or otherwise I would be in serious trouble. He also said that if I did not produce her very quickly the statements I had made would be in the newspapers the first thing I knew. I made up my mind next morning to go to Quebec, and, in fact, I did go. On the boat I made the acquaintance of a quartermaster there. On the second day before we arrived at Quebec, as I was sitting by the wheel-house, the quartermaster came and said he had a letter he wanted to give me—about three o'clock in the afternoon.

The Lord Chief Justice—Is the quartermaster coming or not?

Mr. Huntly Jenkins—No, my lord, we have not got him.

The Lord Chief Justice—Then I do not know that we can have this conversation.

Mr. Huntly Jenkins—If I may say so, I respectfully agree that we cannot have the conversation. Perhaps I might put it in this way.

(*To Witness*)—Did you enter into an arrangement with the quartermaster?—Yes, I entered into an arrangement with the quartermaster to hide me, as he told me——

We cannot have the conversation——

The Lord Chief Justice—You had better have the whole of it if you have part of it.

(*To Witness*)—He told you what?—He told me that the captain knew who I was and also who Miss Le Neve was, and that I was to be arrested by the police at Quebec. He also told me that I must leave a note behind

me saying that I had jumped overboard, and that in the middle of the night he would make a splash in the water and tell the captain that I had gone.

Examination continued—As a matter of fact, I wrote one card that same day, and that night he took me downstairs, but somebody came along and prevented us from going down—they saw us, so I kept that card, and he said he would put me down the next day. I then wrote the short card next morning, just a short time before Inspector Dew came on board. The long card was to be put on my pillow in the berth in the cabin. I had arranged with Miss Le Neve, as the quartermaster said that there was no charge against her—that they did not want her at all—I had arranged with her that when I got ashore safely I gave her an address in the States where she was to write to me and let me know when everything was all right and she could join me.

What does this mean, "Shall we wait until to-night about ten or eleven o'clock, if not, what time"?—The night before I had arranged that, as he had failed to get me hidden away that same night, he would hide me the next night, just when we got to Quebec or a short time before we got to Quebec. As he had settled no time I wrote this little card to give to him to find out what time. I understood we should arrive at Quebec at twelve or one o'clock at night; that was what the steward on the boat told me.

Was Inspector Dew's coming on board at Father Point a surprise to you?—It was at Father Point—well, I did not expect him at all. I thought there had been a cable to the Quebec police; I did not expect Inspector Dew; that was a surprise to me.

Inspector Dew says that you said on arrest, "I am not sorry; the anxiety has been too much." What were you referring to then?—I was referring to this, that I expected to be arrested from all these lies I had told; I thought probably it would cast such a suspicion upon me, and perhaps they would keep me in prison—I do not know how long, perhaps for a year—until they found the missing woman. I said to Inspector Dew, "It is only fair to say that she knows nothing about it—I never told her anything."

What were you referring to when you made use of that observation?—I had never told Miss Le Neve anything about my talking to my wife before she went away about this scandal; I had told her that my wife had gone away, and I told her afterwards that she was dead. These were the only two things that I told Miss Le Neve. Consequently she never knew anything about all these letters and lies that I had disseminated. I did not give any explanation to Inspector Dew regarding the two cards, because, while Inspector Dew went down to see Miss Le Neve, the chief inspector, or the man who was with him, told me, "We deal very differently with people in Canada when we arrest them to what they do in England; we tell them that they must not say anything." He added, "Now don't you say a word on anything—cut your tongue out—have nothing to say."

With regard to the money that was put into the Charing Cross Bank, my wife had no money of her own; all the money that ever went into the bank was what I put in. The jewellery which she was possessed of I

bought as an investment when I was in America. Besides that jewellery I think she had a watch, and I think she had one or two rings that she had before we were married—probably given to her by the other man. I bought in New York the jewellery that has been produced in the course of this case. I supplied the money for all my wife's clothes and all her furs. I never knew what she did have, because I gave her money with a free hand, and she bought as she liked; in fact, after she went away I was surprised to find what she did have. I was not short of money at all in January of this year; I had plenty of money coming in. I always paid my rent regularly, and I never ran any bills of any kind in the way of tradesmen's bills. I do not think my wife knew of my relations with Miss Le Neve, because she always treated Miss Le Neve with the greatest courtesy when she came into my office. There was no obstacle ever put in my way if I wanted to go and see Miss Le Neve. My time was my own; I went as I liked, and I often stayed away from business whole days at a time. I told Miss Le Neve that if ever my wife went away and got a divorce I should marry her certainly.

Was she perfectly satisfied with the position she occupied?—She seemed to be very happy.

Now, I just want to put this to you, did your wife as a fact have a scar?—She did.

By the Lord Chief Justice—It was in the lower part of the abdomen, from the pubic bone upwards towards the navel, in the middle line.

Examination continued—That scar was caused by an operation for ovariotomy. My wife had a navel.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I believe that operation was done about twelve years ago; it was shortly before we came to England the first time. The scar was about 4½ inches long, I believe. It was a small scar, because only the ovaries were removed. It came very close to the navel.

Examination continued—My wife bleached her hair, and I sometimes helped her. She was very particular with it, and she applied the bleaching fluid probably every four or five days. She was very anxious that nobody should ever know that she had any dark hair at all. She was a woman who was very particular about her hair. Only the tiniest portions of the hairs at the roots after they began to grow could be seen to be dark.

Did you ever at any time administer any hyoscin to your wife?—Never.

Those remains that were found at your house in Hilldrop Crescent—have you any idea whose they were?—I beg your pardon.

The remains that were found in the cellar at Hilldrop Crescent——?—I had no idea. I knew nothing about them till I came back to England.

The Lord Chief Justice—That concludes the evidence-in-chief, I understand?

Mr. Huntly Jenkins—Yes, my lord.

The Court adjourned.

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

Fourth Day—Friday, 21st October, 1910.

HAWLEY HARVEY CRIPPEN (recalled), cross-examined by Mr. MUIR—On the early morning of the 1st February you were left alone in your house with your wife?—Yes.

She was alive?—She was.

And well?—She was.

Do you know of any person in the world who has seen her alive since?—I do not.

Do you know of any person in the world who has ever had a letter from her since?—I do not.

Do you know of any person in the world who can prove any fact snowing that she ever left that house alive?—Absolutely not; I have told Mr. Dew exactly all the facts.

At what hour did you last see her on the 1st February?—I think it would be about between two and three some time that we retired; that would be the last I saw her.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—You mean on the 1st February?—Yes.

After the party?—After the party.

Between 2 and 3 a.m. on the 1st February?—Between then; I cannot say exactly what time it was.

The LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—That is near enough.

By Mr. MUIR—Did you breakfast at home?—I did.

Who prepared your breakfast?—I prepared my own breakfast; I nearly always did.

Who usually prepared the breakfast?—I did myself.

Did your wife as a rule come down to breakfast?—Very seldom. We were usually very late in retiring, and I was off probably at half-past eight in the morning.

We have heard that you were a kind and attentive husband?—I was.

Preparing the breakfast in the morning, did you usually take her a cup of tea?—Not often; once in a great while I took her a cup of coffee, but very seldom.

That she would take upon an empty stomach?—Yes.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—Coffee, you say; not cocoa?—Yes, coffee. We never had tea in the morning.

By Mr. MUIR—When did you come home?—I cannot say to the exact hour that night, but I generally came home at 7,30; that is my general home hour.

What time did you come home on that night when you say you did not find your wife there?—The nearest I should say is, it would be my usual time, about 7.30.

Do you not recollect on that momentous night what time it was you came home?—I would not like to say. It was somewhere near 7.30, it might have been 7.25; it might have been 7.35; but it was close on to 7.30.

Would you kindly attend closely to my question and see if you can

H. H. Crippen and Miss Le Neve in the dock at Bow Street.

Evidence for Defence.

answer it. On that important night in your life, do you not recollect what time it was that you got home?

The Lord Chief Justice—I think he has answered that. He says, "As near as I can say, 7.30. It might be 7.25, or 7.35." He has answered you. Of course, you can press it further, but he has answered the question.

Mr. Muir—If your lordship pleases.

(*To Witness*)—Did you tell Inspector Dew that you got home between five and six?—I do not remember telling him that hour.

Listen, "I came to business the next morning, and when I went home between 5 and 6 p.m. I found she had gone." Is that right?—If I said that to him, that was probably right. I cannot trace it back.

That was a Tuesday?—A Tuesday, yes.

The 1st February?—Yes.

Where did you think your wife had gone?—I supposed, as she had always been talking about Bruce Miller to me, that she had gone there. That was the only thing I could make.

That is to America?—To America.

Have you made inquiries——?—No.

As to what steamers were going to America on or about that date?—No, I have not.

At no time?—At no time.

Not since your arrest?—Not at all.

What?—Not at any time.

Not to find out whether there was some steamer sailing for America on which there was a woman answering the description of your wife?—I have not.

Nobody has made those inquiries?—No.

Was there any steamer leaving on that Tuesday?—That I do not know.

Or on the Wednesday?—There usually are steamers on Wednesdays and Saturdays, and at one time there was a Friday steamer; whenever I have gone over to America it has either been on Wednesday, Saturday, or Friday.

By the Lord Chief Justice—You were asked about this period; you say you know of steamers on Wednesdays and Saturdays. Do you know of any others?—I believe there is a steamer on Friday. I am not speaking from my late inquiries; I am only speaking from what I know from my previous inquiries and voyages.

By Mr. Muir—You have made no inquiries at all?—I have made no inquiries at all.

Going to America on the 1st February, did your wife take any of her furs with her?—That I could not say. She had any quantity of furs—any quantity of dresses.

Did she take any of her boxes with her?—I believe there is one missing. There were a lot of trunks and boxes in the house; I did not know how many, because she bought several lately—well, not lately, but early last fall. I believe she bought two or three boxes.

By the Lord Chief Justice—You must kindly listen to the question;

it is a very important one. You are not asked whether she bought them. Are you able to say whether she took any boxes with her?—I am not able to say definitely.

By Mr. Muir—Is there a cabstand near your house?—There is one round the corner somewhere—round in York Road there is a cabstand.

The cabstand, I suppose, where you went to get a cab for Mr. Martinetti?—Well, I picked that up on the street.

But you went there first to see whether there was one?—Yes, I went down there first.

That is the place where you are usually in the habit of going for a cab?—Yes; there are seldom any there at that time of night. That is the reason I picked up one on the street.

But in the day time is that where you get a cab from?—Yes. There are usually cabs there in the day time

You have been living there for 5½ years?—Yes.

Did you go to the cabstand to inquire?—I made no inquiries whatever.

Please listen to the question. Did you go to the cabstand to inquire whether any cabman had come to take away a box for your wife?—I did not.

At any time?—At no time.

Not since your arrest?—No.

Had you got neighbours at 39 Hilldrop Crescent on either side?—Yes, we had neighbours on either side.

Have inquiries been made of the neighbours to know whether a cab or a box was seen to leave your house on the 1st February?—I have made none.

And, so far as you know, none have been made?—Not so far as I know.

You do not suggest that your wife, on a voyage to America in February, would walk away from the house?—I am sure I do not know what she would do. She was a very impulsive woman.

But you have made no inquiries?—I have made no inquiries.

I suppose the usual tradesmen came to your house?—We had no tradesmen calling, except the milkman on Sundays.

How did the milk that you used in the household get into the house?—We did not use the ordinary milk; we used condensed milk.

The baker—how did the bread get into the house?—Well, we did have a baker. Oh, the milkman brought the bread probably about two or three times a week.

Have you inquired of the milkman whether he saw your wife alive after you had left the house on that morning of the 1st February?—I have already said that I have made no inquiries.

The Lord Chief Justice—That answer covers everything; you can make any comment on it you like, Mr. Muir. The specific matter is, of course, most important. He has said definitely that never at any time has he made or caused to be made any inquiries whatever.

By Mr. Muir—It would be most important for your defence in this case on the charge of murder if any person could be found who saw your wife alive after the Martinettis saw her alive; you realise that?—I do.

Evidence for Defence.

And you have made no inquiries at all?—I have not conducted my own defence.

Of tradesmen, or neighbours, or cabmen. You say you have not conducted your own defence?—I have not.

You have been consulted about it, I suppose?—Certainly.

Did you suggest inquiries of that kind?—I did not.

Mr. Tobin—My lord, can my friend ask about what passes between him and his solicitors?

The Lord Chief Justice—I think he is entitled to that general question. In reply to Mr. Muir he has said, "I have made no inquiries, and as far as I know no one has made any." I think Mr. Muir is entitled to ask anything that is not confidential between him and his solicitor.

By Mr. Muir—You did not suggest it?—I did not suggest it.

By the Lord Chief Justice—You need not answer any question as to what you told your solicitor, but you must answer this question which Mr. Muir puts to you. Have you made any suggestion as to inquiries being made anywhere?—I have always replied that there have been no inquiries so far as I know.

No, no. Have you made any suggestion to Mr. Newton or any one as to inquiries being made anywhere?—That is a point that did not occur to me, so I have not made any such suggestions.

By Mr. Muir—Did you know that any such inquiry would be fruitless?—I know nothing of the kind.

Supposing your wife had written for her furs and jewels, what would have happened?—I would have kept them. I paid for them, and I should not have given them up—after leaving me.

Did you know that she would not write for them?—I did not.

What money did you allow your wife, or give her?—I did not allow her any special money; I gave her with a free hand whatever she seemed to want at any time; if she asked me for money she always had it—£2, £3, and £4.

Sums like that?—Sums like that, yes; I have even given her as high as £35 to buy some special things with.

Up to March of 1909 you had been putting by money—you and she?

By the Lord Chief Justice—How long ago was it that you gave her £35 to buy something special?—When she bought that ermine cape.

When was that?—It was back in about four years ago—three years ago, I think.

Then, just to take Mr. Muir's question—£2, £3, and £4 is the sort of money that you would be giving her before she disappeared?—Yes.

By Mr. Muir—Had you ceased putting by money by way of deposit in March, 1909; that is the last deposit?—Yes.

December, 1909, notice of withdrawal was given?—So I am told.

You knew of it, did you not?—I did not know of it.

You did not?—I did not; the first I knew of it was when Mr. Newton applied to the bank.

November, 1909, your £3 a week from Munyons stopped?—Yes.

January, 1910, you were not quite so well off as you had been?—Well, I think my commissions amounted to pretty nearly the same thing, if not possibly more; I would not be sure about it.

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

Did you tell Inspector Dew that the commission business did not pay?—It did not pay me, because it was too much trouble to me for what I got out of it.

Where do you suppose your wife was going to get the money to pay her passage to America?—She always had plenty of money apparently.

Did you give her any?—I did not give her any, no; I asked her if she was provided with money, if she wished any, and she said, "No, she wanted nothing off me."

You asked her if she wanted any money?—Yes.

When did you ask her that?—I asked her at the time she said she was going to leave me.

How many times had she said that she was going to leave you?—Quite a number of times—numerous times.

A great number of times?—A great number of times.

Did you always on those occasions ask her whether she wanted money to go away with?—I never paid any attention, because she had never carried it to such an extent.

She said she did not want any money from you?—Yes.

Were you in want of money?—I was not.

What did you do with the money that you got from pawning your wife's jewels?—I used it in paying for advertising a new scheme I was starting—a new preparation I was putting on the market.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Do you mean the whole £200—the £80 and the £115?—Yes, I probably used most of it.

You are not asked "probably"; you were asked what you used the money for?—For paying for the advertising.

By Mr. Muir—Anything else?—Well, I also bought some new dental instruments with it.

Were any of those matters urgent matters?—Not at all, no.

You are quite sure about that?—Quite so, because I only contracted for the advertising after I had pawned the diamonds; the first advertising did not appear until a couple of weeks after.

There was no urgency about it at all?—Not at all.

Why were you in such a hurry to pawn your wife's earrings and marquise rings?—Because when I contracted for the advertising I would have to pay cash.

When did you contract?—About a few days after that.

A few days after the 2nd February?—Yes.

Why, then, were you in such a hurry to pawn your wife's jewellery?—I think I have already answered that.

What? Why were you in such a hurry to pawn your wife's jewels?—Because I had already this scheme in my mind, and as soon as I made my final arrangements I put the money in hand.

You already had this scheme in your mind, had you?—Yes.

For how long?—For at least two months. I had been preparing my advertising and getting my bottles together and my solutions.

Before the 19th January you had this scheme in your mind?—Yes.

And you wanted money for it?—Before the 19th—long before that.

You wanted money for it?—Oh, I could have got the money without doing that.

Evidence for Defence.

You wanted money for it?—I could have got the money without doing that; I could have raised it at the bank, and I also had another business from which I could have drawn money for it if I had wanted it.

And on the 2nd February you began to raise money for it on your wife's jewels?—Quite so.

Had you never pawned jewellery of your wife's before?—I never pawned my wife's jewellery before.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Had you ever pawned jewellery before?—I had pawned jewellery before, yes.

By Mr. Muir—Of your wife's?—No, of my own.

Were those two occasions, the 2nd and 9th February of this year, the only two occasions on which you had ever pawned jewellery of your wife's?—I refuse to accept the idea that it was my wife's.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Jewellery that your wife had been in the habit of wearing?—That she had been in the habit of wearing, yes; I have pawned jewellery before.

By Mr. Muir—Of hers?—No, it was some that I wore myself.

Those were the only two occasions?—Those were the only two occasions.

Had you forgotten that you had pawned that jewellery on the 8th July?—No.

You remember it quite well?—Quite well.

Did you say this to Inspector Dew, "I have never pawned or sold anything belonging to her before or after she left"?—I did, but I did not consider it was her property; I considered myself justified in answering in that way.

You got bank notes for those jewels?—Yes.

You changed those bank notes through Miss Curnow?—Yes.

Of your offices in Albion House?—Yes, Miss Curnow always went to the bank for me.

Did you say this to Inspector Dew, "Any notes that I have changed through any one in this building were in connection with my business"?—It was done in connection with my business.

What was your business that you changed these notes in connection with?—The dental business.

You had in your mind, had you, that the notes you were speaking of were notes that were the proceeds of that jewellery?—Quite so.

And when the inspector asked you whether you had changed any notes through any one in that building, that is how you answered it?—Because the money was used in connection with the dental business.

Then you told the truth, according to your view, about the jewellery?—Yes.

Did you proceed to account for your wife's jewellery by producing those exhibits which you showed to Inspector Dew at the house?—I showed him some that she left.

That she left behind?—Yes.

And did you tell the inspector that she had other jewellery, and must have taken that with her?—She did have some, as I have already said; she had some rings and a watch that belonged to her before she was married.

Did you intend the inspector to believe that you were accounting for the whole of your wife's jewellery?—Certainly.

And said not a word about those two pieces of jewellery that you had pawned?

The LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—This is comment, Mr. Muir.

Mr. MUIR—If your lordship pleases.

(*To Witness*)—The complaint that your wife made on the night of the dinner party with the Martinettis was a most unreasonable complaint?—Well, I considered it so.

No reason at all why you should go to show Mr. Martinetti to the lavatory?—No.

He knew his way quite well?—Quite well.

And that was the sole cause of your wife resolving to leave you?—Well, it was a thing that had been pending evidently for a long time.

Had she any other cause for leaving you?—That is the only cause I know.

When you found she had gone, you say you sat down to think how you could cover up the scandal?—Yes.

With her friends?—With her friends.

And the members of the Guild?—Yes.

She had a great many friends?—Well, not a large circle of friends; there were only a few who were really the intimate friends.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—She had a few very intimate friends?—Yes.

By Mr. MUIR—Those we have seen?—Yes.

And Mrs. Nash, another?—Yes.

Whom we have not seen?—Yes.

Mrs. Ginette, in America?—Yes.

Mrs. Eugene Stratton?—Yes.

Those were all intimate friends of hers?—All intimate friends.

You did your best to cover up the scandal?—I did.

It involved you in a great deal of trouble?—Well, that has already been acknowledged.

But that is the fact?—That is the fact.

I want to clear up one or two incidents. Just look at that. (Handing exhibit 32.) Is that your letter written on Sunday, 20th March, at 39 Hilldrop Crescent?—It is.

At that time was Ethel Le Neve living with you at that address?—I would not be sure whether she came permanently to live with me at that time or not, but she had been off and on there.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—About what date do you put it that Miss Le Neve came to live with you; it will be a very important date?—It was shortly before Easter.

Easter, we are told, was somewhere about the end of March?—The 27th, I think.

We shall have to have it asked presently, and I should like to have it fixed now, when she came, so that we may have it in our minds. When do you say Miss Le Neve came to live at Hilldrop Crescent?—The first time that she came there was 2nd February, the Wednesday night, on 2nd

February. From that time on she was with me probably two or three nights or perhaps more out of the week, but when she came to stay permanently I would not like to say, except that I know it was shortly before Easter; because, when she had her clothes removed from Mrs. Jackson's to my house I am sure it was some time before Easter, but what the day was I would not like to say.

By Mr. Muir—Mrs. Jackson has said that on 12th March Ethel Le Neve ceased to live at her house altogether. Is that the date on which she came to you?—I will not dispute that date, because I know it was some time before Easter; but she had been there at least two or three or four nights out of the week regularly before that.

Just let me interpose this, in consequence of what you have just said. On the night of 2nd February did Ethel Le Neve sleep at Hilldrop Crescent?—She did.

The Lord Chief Justice—You must press him upon that, for a particular reason.

Mr. Muir—You are sure of that?—I am sure of that.

Now, I want to come to the letter which is in your hand. Was it written by you?—It was.

At Hilldrop Crescent, on Sunday, the 20th March?—Yes.

Was Ethel Le Neve living with you at that time?—She was; at least, I am sure she was there that Sunday; well, I have already acknowledged that I would accept that date that she came to live with me.

The 12th March?—The 12th March; so she must have been there on that Sunday.

"Dear Clara and Paul—Please forgive me not running in during the week, but I have really been so upset by very bad news from Belle that I did not feel equal to talking with any one. And now I have just had a cable saying she is so dangerously ill with double pleuro-pneumonia that I am considering if I had not better go at once"?—"Go over at once."

"I don't want to worry you with my troubles, but I felt I must explain why I had not been to see you. Will you try and run in during the week and have a chat. Hope you are both well. With love and best wishes." Had you, when you write that letter, arranged to go to Dieppe with Ethel Le Neve for Easter?—Yes, I believe I had.

And did you want to wipe your wife off the slate before you went?—It was not a question of that kind. It was a question, as I have already explained in my statement, that I felt something was necessary to stop all the worry that I was having with the inquiries.

Did you want to announce your wife's death before you started for your holiday with Ethel Le Neve on the following Thursday?—I do not think that follows as a logical sequence.

That is what you intended to do at the time you wrote that letter?—I do not know whether I had at that time fixed the time when I would say that the other cable had arrived or not; I would not say that.

Now, Mrs. Martinetti was one of your wife's dearest friends?—She was a very intimate friend; they were probably with us once a week—either we were at their house or they were at our house.

And Mrs. Martinetti had a great affection for your wife?—I believe so. There is no doubt about that?—I should say so, yes.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—You think that Mrs. Crippen saw Mrs. Martinetti, or that they were visiting the one or the other at least once a week?—Once a week.

Is that independent of the meetings at the Guild?—Yes, independent of them; although sometimes we took our dinner with them on the Wednesday night; so that would be the Wednesday in that week; sometimes there was an extra night.

By Mr. MUIR—Did you consider at all, in this plan of yours, the pain that the announcement of your wife's death would give to Mrs. Martinetti?—I did not think they were so closely attached as has been made out.

You had an interview with her on the 23rd, had you not?—Yes.

Was she much distressed to hear of your wife's illness?—She did not seem distressed to me.

You prepared an advertisement of your wife's death for the *Era*?—Yes.

When did you do that?—I cannot tell you.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—How long before it appeared?—Oh, it would be two or three days before.

By Mr. MUIR—Did you think of the pain that that would give to your wife's friends?—I was not considering them at all.

On 24th March you sent a telegram to Mrs. Martinetti, saying that you had had a cable that your wife had died the previous night?—Yes.

Did you consider Mrs. Martinetti's feelings at all?—I never realised that there was that amount of affection as there has been apparently, or that they try to make apparent.

You sent that from Victoria station on the eve of your departure with Ethel Le Neve?—Yes.

Then you went off and took your holiday with her?—Yes.

And you came back?—Yes.

The LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—Mr. Muir, there is one question about that telegram that I want to ask; it says, "Please 'phone Annie."

By Mr. MUIR—Who is Annie?—That is Mrs. Stratton.

Mrs. Eugene Stratton, another close friend?—Yes.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—Why did you want her told?—Because she was also an intimate friend.

By Mr. MUIR—On 30th March, when you had returned, Mrs. Martinetti and Mrs. Smythson came to see you about your wife's death?—Yes.

Were you in mourning?—I could not say.

Think; were you in mourning?—I did put mourning on afterwards, but I could not say whether that day I had mourning clothes on then or not.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—You did put mourning clothes on at some time?—Yes, at some time.

How, with reference to your announcement of your wife's death; was it contemporaneously or after or before?—Only temporarily.

I did not ask you about temporarily, I asked when you put them on?—Very soon.

Evidence for Defence.

By Mr. Muir—As soon as you returned from Dieppe?—I think so. I would not say if I had mourning on on that day, or whether it was the next day or the next day after that.

Very soon anyhow?—Very soon, yes.

Was Mrs. Smythson an intimate friend of your wife?—I would not call her an intimate friend.

Mrs. Martinetti?—Certainly, yes.

Were they much distressed?—Yes.

And had you to play the rôle of the bereaved husband?—Yes.

Did you do it well?—I am sure I could not tell you that.

Your wife's friends were with you, condoling with you upon the loss of your wife; did you play the part well?—That is a question you should ask them; I cannot say.

You got a letter from Dr. Burroughs and his wife—two of your wife's oldest friends?—Yes.

And you wrote to him?—I did.

Take exhibit 31. (Letter handed to witness.) It is on black-edged paper?—Yes.

In keeping with your mourning?—Yes.

And the letter in keeping with your rôle of bereaved husband?—Yes.

"Albion House, 5th April.—My Dear Doctor, I feel sure you will forgive me for my apparent neglect, but really I have been nearly out of my mind with poor Belle's death, so far away from me." Sheer hypocrisy?—It is already admitted sir.

Sheer hypocrisy?—I am not denying any of this.

"She was not with her sister"—which sister were you speaking of?—The one in New York.

Which of them—the half-sister or the whole sister?—The half-sister.

By the Lord Chief Justice—What name?—Mrs. Mills.

Not the lady who has been called?—No.

By Mr. Muir—Was she very fond of that half-sister?—Well, she seemed to be, but when the half-sister was over here they did not agree at all.

And Tessa, the whole sister, who has been here, was she very fond of her?—I do not think she had written to her for an immensely long time.

One of the witnesses, Dr. Burroughs, told us that there was a sister, Tessa, whom she was very fond of. That was the sister that Dr. Burroughs says he thought you were referring to in this letter?—Yes.

That is the lady who has been here?—Yes; she could not have been so very fond of her, because she wrote more often to Mrs. Mills.

"She was not with her sister. She was out in California on business for me, and, quite like her disposition, would keep up, although she should have been in bed." Is that a true description of the disposition of your wife?—She would never give in to anything.

She was a cheerful, bright person?—Yes.

This wife of yours whom you were pretending to mourn?—Yes.

"She would keep up when she should have been in bed, with the consequence that pleuro-pneumonia terminated fatally. Almost to the

last she refused to let me know there was any danger, so the cable that she had gone came as a most awful shock to me." Your imagination was equal to the shock?—I do not see why you keep on with these questions, because I am willing to admit and tell you that they were all lies right through.

By the Lord Chief Justice—That may be quite true, Dr. Crippen, but it is a very serious part of the case, and you must really answer the questions, lies or no lies.—I beg your pardon, my lord.

By Mr. Muir—That was pure imagination—this awful shock?—All imagination entirely.

"I fear I have sadly neglected my friends, but pray forgive me, and believe me most truly appreciative of your sympathy. Even now I am not fit to talk to my friends, but as soon as I feel I can control myself I will run in on you and Maud one evening. I am, of course, giving up the house, and every night packing things away. Love to both, and again thanking you for your kindness to me. As ever, yours Peter." That was to your wife's friends?—Yes.

How did you know that your wife would not write to Maud Burroughs?—I did not believe she would write to anybody, the way she was going on.

How did you know she would not?—Because she told me to cover up any scandal there was; if she had not said that she would have intended to write herself.

How did you know that your wife would not write to Maud Burroughs, her friend?—Well, I did not know it positively, of course; I only inferred it from what she said.

You did not know it?—I did not know it positively.

How did you know that she would not write to her friend, Mrs. Martinetti?—The same answer applies.

You did not know?—I did not know.

Do you ask the jury to believe that not knowing that your wife might write to those people, you told them she was dead?—Yes.

Where did you think she was?—I have already expressed an opinion on that. I thought she had gone to Chicago, where Bruce Miller lived.

How would she get to Chicago?—By a boat and by train.

Through what port?—Through New York by Philadelphia, or Boston, or Quebec.

New York, the direct route?—I do not know whether New York is as much direct as Quebec.

New York, where she had two sisters alive?—Yes.

And a stepfather?—Yes.

And Mrs. Ginnette, an intimate friend?—Yes.

For all you knew, she might have gone to see those people?—Yes. But I did not think she would.

Will you look at exhibit 71. (Handed.) "39 Hilldrop Crescent." The envelope post-marked 7th April. Is that when you wrote it?—That is right.

Your wife had left you on the 1st February?—Yes.

Gone to America?—Yes.

How did you know she had not called upon Mrs. Mills?—I did not

know, but I felt sure that if she had I would have had some word from there.

And you wrote this letter to Mrs. Mills and her husband?—Yes.

"My dear Louise and Robert"—it is written on black edged paper?—Yes.

"I hardly know how to write to you of my dreadful loss. The shock to me has been so dreadful that I am hardly able to control myself. My dear Cora has gone. To make the shock to me more dreadful I did not even see her at the last. A few weeks ago we had news that an old relative of mine in California had died, and to secure important property to ourselves it was necessary for one of us to put the matter in a lawyer's hands at once. As I was very busy, Cora proposed that she should go, and as it was necessary for some one to be there at once, she would go straight through from here to California, without stopping at all, then return by way of Brooklyn, and so would be able to pay you a long visit. Unfortunately on the way out my poor Cora caught a severe cold, and not having while travelling a chance to take proper care of herself, it settled on her lungs, later to develop into pleuro-pneumonia. She wished not to frighten me, and so kept writing not to worry about her, it was only a slight matter. Next, I heard by cable, she was dangerously ill. Two days later, after I had cabled to know should I write to her, I heard the dreadful news that she had passed away. Imagine, if you can, the dreadful shock to me never more to see my Cora alive nor hear her voice again. She is being sent back, and I shall soon have what is left of her. Of course, I am giving up the house. In fact, it drives me mad being in it alone. I will sell out everything. I do not know what I shall do. Probably find some business to take me travelling for a few months until I can recover from the shock. As soon as I have a settled address I will write again to you, as it is so terrible to me to have to write this dreadful news. Will you please tell all the friends of our loss. With love to all. I will write again soon, and give you my address, probably in France. From Doctor." What scandal was there which made it necessary for you to write that letter to Cora Crippen's sister?—Because I knew that Mrs. Ginnette was in New York, and that she would probably go to see the sisters, and that if she did so it was necessary for them to know why she had gone.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I am afraid I do not understand your answer. Who would probably go to see her sisters?—Mrs. Ginnette, who was one of the members of the Guild.

By Mr. Muir—And, for all you knew, Cora Crippen might have seen Mrs. Ginnette?—If she had I should have heard before.

Do you ask the jury to believe that you wrote that letter without the certainty——?—I do.

Listen—without the certainty that Cora Crippen would never see her sisters again?—I do; it is only the matter of the sequence of lies which I was obliged to tell.

You are[1] telling lies?—I have already acknowledged it.

[1] This question illustrates the acoustics of the Central Criminal Court. Obviously Dr. Crippen heard it as "you were telling lies—which you hoped would be believed." As it stands it makes the witness confess to committing perjury in the witness-box.—Ed.

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

You are telling lies, which you hope will be believed?—Yes.

And you think they will be believed?—I believed they would be.

But if Cora Crippen were alive she might call at any moment on her sisters?—I did not think she would. If she went off with some other man I did not think she would have the face to go there.

This was a very elaborate series of representations to a large number of persons?—Yes.

For whose sake were you going through this elaborate process?—The sake of both of us.

For your sake—what did it matter to you?—Well, I did not wish the friends here to think that I had treated her so badly that she had gone away and left me.

You did not wish your friends here to think that you had treated her badly?—Yes.

Is that right?—Yes, so far as my part of it was concerned.

Going about, as you were, with Ethel Le Neve?—That was not public, outside the one time that I went to the ball.

And again, when she was wearing your wife's furs?—Yes.

And again at Dieppe, and again taking her to live with you at Hilldrop Crescent, your wife's house?—Nobody would know the difference.

How were you saving yourself from anything by telling those lies?—I was saving myself from the scandal of my friends.

What scandal were you covering up?—The scandal of the separation from my wife.

When you were living in open adultery, according to you, with Ethel Le Neve?—It was not so open as you seem to imagine.

The Lord Chief Justice—This is comment now, Mr. Muir. The only scandal he can suggest is that his wife had gone away; that is what it amounts to.

By Mr. Muir—Now, you had treated your wife well?—Yes.

Given her money?—Yes.

And jewels?—She had them to wear.

And clothes?—Clothes.

And kept up an establishment for her for four years after you ceased to cohabit with her; and then she treated you with ingratitude, and went away and left you for no cause at all?—Yes.

Why should you seek to cover up a scandal for such a wife as that?—I do not think I can explain it any further than I have.

A wife who had deserted you for another man—why should you seek to cover up scandal for such a wife as that?

The Lord Chief Justice—He says he can give no further explanation; there is no object in repeating it.

By Mr. Muir—You had been a tenant of 39 Hilldrop Crescent for five and a half years?—Yes.

Had the floor of the cellar of that house been disturbed during the whole of that time?—Not to my knowledge.

But would you know if it had been?—I was not at home; Sundays was the only time I was at home—Sundays and holidays.

As far as you knew, it had not been disturbed?—As far as I knew; that is the only answer I can give you.

Evidence for Defence.

When you were not at home your wife was?—There were many times that she was not at home; very often she went out in the morning, and I did not see her till half-past one or so the next morning.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Will you listen to the question. You are being asked with regard to the cellar being disturbed. You say that, so far as you knew, it had never been disturbed, and you had no reason to think that it was ever disturbed?—No, I had no reason to think so.

By Mr. Muir—You had no reason to think so at all?—No.

Had you ever been in the cellar?—Yes.

Who carried the coals upstairs for use in the house?—We did not use coal upstairs.

None at all?—None at all.

Did you use coal in the house at all?—Not very much; we had mostly gas fires.

Did you use any at all?—We used some in the kitchen range at times.

But who carried it when it was necessary to carry it?—I very seldom ever carried it; sometimes on Sundays I carried in some coal.

So that you were familiar with the cellar; you knew where the place was?—I have not said that I was not.

You know, of course, that those remains were found in the cellar?—I was told when I returned to England by my solicitor.

So far as you know, they cannot have been put there while you were tenants?—Not that I know of, of course.

So far as you know, that is impossible?—So far as I know. I would not say it was impossible, because there were times when we were away; during my absence in the daytime my wife was often away.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Do you really ask the jury to understand that your answer is that, without your knowledge or your wife's, at some time during the five years, those remains could have been put there?—I say that it does not seem possible—I mean, it does not seem probable, but there is a possibility.

By Mr. Muir—Now, I want you to look please at the two suits of pyjamas. (Handed.) Are those your pyjamas?—They are.

When did you get them?—I think I bought these last September.

By the Lord Chief Justice—You mean September, 1909?—Yes.

By Mr. Muir—Did you buy them yourself?—Yes, I bought them myself.

Where?—At Jones Brothers.

Had you any other suits of pyjamas at that time?—There were my worn-out ones.

Which do you mean by your worn-out ones?—Well, they are not here.

Look at exhibit 48 (handed)?—I usually had three pairs at a time, and this is some of the previous three pairs that I bought before I bought this lot.

Mr. Tobin—My lord, when he said that he bought pyjamas in September, 1909, I gathered he was speaking of the whole lot.

The Lord Chief Justice—No, he was speaking of the two.

The Witness—Of the two.

The Lord Chief Justice—He said, "I had just bought the other previous lot."

The WITNESS—There should be another pair belonging to this lot.

By Mr. MUIR—That pair of trousers—how long have you had those?—That would probably be a long time previous to the time I bought these; I could not say; this was one of three lots, and these are another—the last three lots I bought. This is the remains of the previous three lots.

You are giving a very, very important answer?—Yes.

I do not want you to do it hurriedly at all?—I thoroughly understand.

Think of what you have said, and look at those things again?—I thoroughly understand you. I say that these two are part of a lot of three that I bought last September, a year ago; this is the only remains of three that I bought previous to this. I cannot say how long previous.

Was it before or after you went to Hilldrop Crescent?—It was after.

One moment; listen to the question; was it before or after you went to Hilldrop Crescent that you bought this suit of pyjamas of which the trousers remain?—After.

Can you tell us at all how long after?—I think it was shortly after, because it was only at that time that I began to wear pyjamas.

Shortly after you went to Hilldrop Crescent?—Yes.

You mean in 1905?—Yes.

Are you sure that you bought those pyjamas, of which those are the trousers, in the year 1905?—I will not say I am sure it was 1905, but I know——

1905 or 1906?

The LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—He says he bought them shortly after he went to Hilldrop Crescent.

Mr. MUIR—My lord, I am questioning him upon certain information that I have.

The LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—You must take his answer, that is all.

By Mr. MUIR—Were not those trousers one of the same purchase of three sets as the other two?—They were not; I am sure of it—positive of that—because I wore them right straight along—one pair one week and the other pair the next week, so that they would all be nearly worn out about together.

What became of the jacket?—That I could not tell you; I could not tell you what became of the other two pairs of trousers and the two jackets—probably worn out, as far as I remember.

Did your wife ever buy pyjamas for you?—No, I bought my own.

Did not your wife buy those pyjamas for you?

The LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—Which are you speaking of now?

By Mr. MUIR—All three?—No.

Did not your wife buy those pyjamas for you at JOLES Brothers' winter sale on 5th January, 1909?—I do not think so.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—You must listen to that question, because you have sworn that you bought them yourself. Now, be careful. The question is a very specific one. Did not your wife buy them at about the 5th January, 1909?—I bought some myself. I would not say that she did not buy some; she may have bought some of this lot; I bought some myself in September.

By Mr. MUIR—Did not your wife buy you three sets of pyjamas at

Evidence for Defence.

Jones Brothers' winter sale on 5th January, 1909?—I would not say that she did.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Will you say that she did not?—I won't say that she did not.

By Mr. Muir—Are not those articles the three suits of pyjamas bought by your wife in January, 1909, minus the jacket?—I do not think so; it cannot be possible; this does not show any signs of wear at all.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Never mind about signs of wear?—That is the only way I can distinguish.

By Mr. Muir—Did not your wife buy you those three suits, one of them being now minus the jacket, on 5th January, 1909?—She bought me some, but I do not know whether these were the ones or not.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Two minutes ago you said to Mr. Muir that your wife never bought you pyjamas, but that you always bought them yourself?—Yes.

Now, you have said, "My wife did buy me some, but I do not know whether these are they"?—Perhaps I should not have put it so positively.

Which is true?—Perhaps I should not have said so positively; I said she may have bought some.

By Mr. Muir—Now, will you take out of the jar and compare it with the pattern of that pair of trousers (exhibits 79 and 80 handed). Is it the same pattern?—It is similar—not the same—I would not say it is the same.

By the Lord Chief Justice—"Similar" is one thing; you are asked whether, as far as you can tell, it is the same pattern?—It looks the same. (The exhibits were handed to the jury.)

Mr. Muir—My lord, may the jury have a lens to count the lines of the pattern?

The Lord Chief Justice—Certainly. Of course, gentlemen, you will observe that one is wet and the other is dry. Do not say anything, just look at them for yourselves; you have not heard the whole of the evidence yet. What is suggested by Mr. Muir is that on careful examination, having regard to the different condition, the pattern of the one is the same as the pattern of the other. That is your point, I think, Mr. Muir?

Mr. Muir—Yes, my lord.

The Lord Chief Justice—Gentlemen, you shall have them in your room presently. I think you had better get all the evidence before you ask any questions about them. All of you shall have an opportunity of examining them.

(*To Witness*)—I think this is so important, Dr. Crippen, that I had better tell you what I have taken. You have now said that your wife did buy some, and these may be they?—Yes.

The clean pair of trousers I am speaking of. Do you wish to alter that answer at all?—I think I said she may have—not that she did buy [illegible].

And that those, what I will call the trousers alone, may be part of them?—These may be.

You were asked about that one?—And the other one may be from the ones that I bought in September.

You were asked about those which are being shown to the jury together

with the others; you were asked whether you would swear that they are not part of the lot bought by your wife for you in January, 1909?—I will not swear that they are either.

Will you swear they are not?—No, I would not swear they are not, but I say I think that that pair is not a recent pair at all.

By Mr. Muir—If those trousers were not part of what your wife bought in 1909, when were they bought?—Well, at almost every sale—that is to say, we will say September, January, and midsummer—there were pyjamas bought either by myself or her. Now, I can't say what lot this comes from; that would be an impossibility for me to say.

How many sets of pyjamas had you at Hilldrop Crescent?—That I could not say.

At one time?—I generally had one set and the remains of another set—the remains of a worn-out set and the other set.

Did not you tell the jury a little time ago that you generally had three sets going?—I am speaking of three sets.

The Lord Chief Justice—I think he meant a set of three. He said, "I always had a set of three and part of a worn-out set."

The Witness—I am speaking of a set of three, and parts of a worn-out set.

The Lord Chief Justice—He is not speaking of two sets and a set of three.

Mr. Muir—Did you have any more?—Than those two pairs?

Yes—of the three?—Of the three, I could not say.

Now, I am going to put this to you, so that you will have an opportunity of altering your answers if you desire to alter them, that those three sets which are now before you, one of them incomplete, were manufactured in November, 1908, and the cloth of which they were made never came into existence before November, 1908?—I can only say that I do not think it is possible that that is so, of this set, for the reason that this is so much worn and these are not.

It is quite possible to call evidence upon this point?—It may be possible, but to my mind it does not seem possible.

I want you to have that in your mind before you give your final answer with regard to those things—that the cloth of which all those three things before you were made was made in November, 1908?—1908.

Yes, 1908—November?—Yes.

And that the jacket in that jar is part of the same cloth?—I could not say.

And that it was sold by Jones Brothers?—That I could not tell you.

If that is right, that pyjama jacket must have got in beside those remains since November, 1908?

Mr. Tobin—My lord, I do not know how far your lordship thinks my friend should carry this?

The Lord Chief Justice—I do not think Mr. Muir is going too far, but I do not think it is necessary to do more than put the questions that he has put. This is not the time for argument.

Mr. Muir—I did not desire to pursue it.

The Lord Chief Justice—You have indicated some very forcible facts

to this witness—quite fairly enough—and given him the opportunity of altering his answer if he liked.

By Mr. Muir—Now, do you wish to alter any answer that you have given?—No, I do not.

When did you make up your mind to go away from London?—The morning after Inspector Dew was there—the 8th or 9th.

By the Lord Chief Justice—The 9th July?—The 9th July.

By Mr. Muir—Are you sure about that?—Yes.

Had you the day before been contemplating the possibility of your going away?—I would not like to say that I had made up my mind. When Inspector Dew came to me and laid out all the facts that he told me, I might have thought, well, if there is all this suspicion, and I am likely to have to stay in jail for months and months and months, perhaps until this woman is found, I had better be out of it.

On the 8th July you thought that?—After I had finished with Inspector Dew.

By the Lord Chief Justice—You must answer this question, Mr. Crippen; do you really mean that you thought that you would have to lie in gaol for months and months; do you say that?—Quite so, yes.

By Mr. Muir—Upon what charge?—Suspicion.

Suspicion of what?—Suspicion of—Inspector Dew said, "This woman has disappeared, she must be found."

Suspicion of what?—Suspicion of being concerned in her disappearance.

What crime did you understand you might be kept in gaol upon suspicion of?—I do not understand the law enough to say. From what I have read it seems to me I have heard of people being arrested on suspicion of being concerned in the disappearance of other people.

The disappearance of other people?—Well, I am doing the best I can to explain it to you; I cannot put it for you in a legal phrase.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Nobody wants you to put it in a legal phrase; the simple question is, what was the charge that you thought might be brought against you after you had seen Inspector Dew?—I could not define the charge, except that if I could not find the woman I was very likely to be held until she was found; that was my idea.

By Mr. Muir—Because of what?—I cannot say why; I can only say that no other idea than that entered my head. If I could not produce the woman——

Yes, what would be the inference?—Mr. Dew told me that I should be in serious trouble; well, I could not make out what the inference would be.

And that was why you contemplated on the afternoon of 8th July flying from the country?—Quite so—that, and the idea that I had said that Miss Le Neve was living with me, and she had told her people she was married to me, and it would put her in a terrible position; the only thing I could think of was to take her away out of the country where she would not have this scandal thrown upon her.

Had you made up your mind then, when you spoke to Miss Curnow?—No, I had not made up my mind then.

"If anything should happen to me give the envelopes to Miss Le Neve"?—I had not made up my mind then.

You had not made up your mind then?—I had not made up my mind then, no.

After that you went into the cellar?—Yes.

With Inspector Dew?—Yes.

And stood there in the cellar?—Yes.

Was it after that that you made up your mind?—No, it was the next morning.

Then it was after that?—Oh, yes, it was after that; it was the next morning, after I had studied the whole matter over.

By the Lord Chief Justice—What Mr. Muir asks is this, you had thought about it on the afternoon of the 8th, but you made up your mind on the morning of the 9th?—Yes, after I had studied the matter over, and after I had consulted with Miss Le Neve as to what she would like to do.

By Mr. Muir—You thought you were in danger of arrest?—Yes.

And so you fled the country?—Yes.

Under a false name?—Yes.

Shaved off your moustache?—Yes.

Left off wearing your glasses in public?—Yes.

Took Le Neve with you?—Yes.

Under a false name?—Yes.

Posing as your son?—Yes.

Went to Antwerp?—Yes.

Stayed in a hotel there?—Yes.

Stayed indoors all day?—Oh, no.

Practically all day?—We did not; we went to the Zoological Gardens, and walked all over the place.

Enjoying yourselves?—Certainly.

Signed the register under a false name in the hotel?—I do not remember signing the register in Antwerp.

I mean in the hotel book. What name did you give at the hotel?—I know in Brussels I signed the hotel book in one place, and in another place I did not.

By the Lord Chief Justice—What you are asked is, what name you gave?—If I gave a name anywhere it would be "Robinson."

By Mr. Muir—Is this a strip of paper cut from the hotel register?

The Lord Chief Justice—You need not pursue it; he says he gave the name of Robinson. It is perhaps a little important, and I will read it as I have it here—"John Robinson, merchant, age 55; place resident at, Canada." Then "Vienne." (*To Witness*)—That, I suppose, is the place of origin?—The place you come from.

It is put down in two places. Is the other where you are going to?—No.

There are two "Viennes" down here?—I think Canada is the place of going to, and Vienna is the place you come from.

This must be made an exhibit now (marked 83). Is that your handwriting or not?—Well, the bottom one is not my handwriting.

Evidence for Defence.

You gave the information for that?—I think, my lord, the bottom one is written by the hotel-keeper.

That is highly probable, and you gave the information for it?—I did.

The name is, "Robinson, John; trade, merchant; age, 55; place of birth, Canada; place of domicile, Quebec; authority who signed the passport, blank; date of passport, blank; destination indicated in passport, blank; from where the visitors have come, Vienne (that is Vienna); Belgian authority that has viséd passport, blank; date of arrival, 10.7.10; (that is the 10th July); date of departure, blank; place where the passengers have said they were going to, Vienna." That is the line for John Robinson. Then there is "Mr. Robinson" "fils" (that means son) "without profession; sixteen years old; born in Canada; residing in Quebec; no passport; no date of departure; place they have come from, Vienna; Belgian authority that has viséd passport, blank; same date of arrival, 10th July; place going to, Vienna." You have no doubt you gave that information?—Yes, I have no doubt about it.

By Mr. Muir—Then the second description is that of Miss Le Neve?—Yes.

Disguised as a boy?—Yes.

Passing as your son?—Yes.

From what hotel does that come; I think it is the Hotel des Ardennes?—Yes.

That is somewhere in Brussels, is it?—Yes.

That is the hotel you stayed at?—In Brussels, yes.

When you got to Quebec on board the steamer, or near Quebec, Inspector Dew came on board?—Yes.

You were much surprised to see him?—I did not expect to see Inspector Dew.

Did you recognise him at once?—Yes.

Though he was disguised; he was not dressed in his inspector's dress?—Well, as soon as I saw him in the cabin I recognised him.

By the Lord Chief Justice—You are asked whether you recognised him when he came on board?—No, I did not recognise him when he came on board.

He was dressed as a pilot?—Yes, he was dressed as a pilot; I did not recognise him until he came into the cabin.

By Mr. Muir—You were quite taken by surprise that you should be interrogated by him or spoken to by him?—Yes, I did not expect to see him.

Up to that time had you thought at all of what charge would be made against you?—I had not.

He told you that you would be charged with the murder and mutilation of your wife?—When he read the warrant, do you mean?

Inspector Dew on board the "Montrose" told you that you would be charged with the murder and mutilation of your wife?—Do you mean that that was in the warrant that he read to me?

No, no; that is what he said before he read the warrant?—Well, I would not pay much attention to what he told me, because I was in such a confusion at the time.

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

The Lord Chief Justice—It is a little more than that. Just pay attention. It is very important. You had better put it to him again, Mr. Muir. Ask him, "did he not." You are making a statement to him, and he does not accept it.

The Witness—No, I do not accept it, because——

By Mr. Muir—Did the inspector say, "Good morning, Dr. Crippen; I am Inspector Dew"?—Yes.

And did you say, "Good morning, Mr. Dew"?—"Good morning, Mr. Dew."

Did the inspector then say, "You will be arrested for the murder and mutilation of your wife, Cora Crippen, in London, on or about 2nd February last"?—I would not say that I took that in, because I was so very much surprised and confused that I did not quite have my right senses.

Did a Canadian officer, Mr. M'Carthy, caution you?—He did.

And tell you that you need not say anything unless you liked?—Yes, and then the other one cautioned me later on.

Wait a moment—caution you that anything you did say would be taken down in writing and might be used in evidence against you?—I do not remember the legal part of that.

He cautioned you?—He cautioned me, yes.

And you realised that you were being charged?—Yes.

With what?—I realised I was being charged.

With what?—Well, I realised that I was being arrested for murder; I remember hearing that.

The murder of your wife?—Yes.

Up to that time did you believe she was alive?—I did.

Did you put any question to Inspector Dew as to whether she had been found?—I did not put any question at all.

As to how he knew she was dead?—No.

By the Lord Chief Justice—You put no questions at all?—I put no questions at all.

By Mr. Muir—You made no reply?—I made no reply.

Were you left in charge of Mr. M'Carthy in the cabin?—Mr. M'Carthy and the other one.

Dennis?—Dennis—well, I did not know the name.

There was another police officer?—Yes, there was another one.

And the chief engineer of the ship?—Yes.

Did those persons remain in the cabin until Inspector Dew came back?—Yes.

When Inspector Dew came back did he go with you to another cabin?—Yes, he took me downstairs to the cabin.

Up to that time you had been in the captain's cabin?—Yes.

As you left the cabin did you say to him, "I am not sorry, the anxiety has been too much"?—Yes.

Anxiety for what?—Anxiety thinking I might be pursued from London.

For what?—For the same reason that I ran away.

That was the anxiety that was too much for you?—Yes.

Evidence for Defence.

To be arrested on some charge the nature of which you did not understand?—I did not understand, no.

Do you remember the handcuffs being put on?—I do.

Do you remember the inspector saying to you, "I must put these on, because on a card found on you you have written that you intend to jump overboard"?—Yes, I do.

Did you say this to him, "I won't; I am more than satisfied, because that anxiety has been too awful"; did you say that?—Yes, the same——

What anxiety?—The same as I have already explained.

Do you remember being searched by Inspector Dew?—Yes.

While that was going on, do you remember asking him, "How is Miss Le Neve"?—Yes.

And his saying, "Agitated, but I am doing all I can for her"?—Yes.

Did you say to the inspector, "It is only fair to her to say that she knows nothing about it; I never told her anything"?—Yes.

"It is only fair to say"; that meant "fair to Le Neve"?—Quite so.

Did you know she had been arrested?—It said so in the warrant.

It said on the warrant that she was charged jointly with you with the murder of your wife?—Yes; that was after the warrant was read to me.

And it was fair to her to say that she knew nothing about it?—Quite so.

That is, nothing about the murder of your wife?—Nothing about any of the circumstances beyond what I have already given in my answers to Mr. Huntly Jenkins.

That she knew nothing about "it"; she was only charged with one thing?—Yes.

The murder of your wife?—Well, I did not refer to the murder. I referred to the circumstances under which the arrest had come about.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Just listen. I want you to appreciate this point clearly. What I took you down as saying yesterday was that you had told her your wife had run away and left you, and that you afterwards told her that your wife was dead?—Yes, that is the two things I told her.

And that you told her nothing else?—I told her nothing else.

Now, in view of what you told us yesterday, and have now repeated to-day, answer Mr. Muir's question as to what you meant by saying "It is only fair to say that she knows nothing about it"?

By Mr. Muir—What was "it"?—I referred to the disappearance and the lies which I told, which I knew would throw me under suspicion from what Mr. Dew had expressed when he was at the house.

"I never told her anything"?—Yes; I never told her anything about the letters or the lies that I had told at all. I told her only two facts, one, that Mrs. Crippen had gone to America, and one that she was dead. That is the only two facts I ever told her. I never told her anything about the lies I had given out, and I never told her anything about the letter that I had written, so that she knew nothing about the suspicious circumstances which brought about my arrest.

That is not what you said; you say that is what you meant?

The Lord Chief Justice—He says that is what he referred to.

The WITNESS—That is what I referred to when I said "it."

By Mr. MUIR—You never told her anything about the suspicious circumstances in which you had left London?—No.

How did you persuade her to disguise herself as a boy and to cut off her hair?—I told her that Mr. Dew had said that there would be serious trouble if I did not find Mrs. Crippen.

You told her nothing about the suspicious circumstances under which you left London; how did you persuade her to cut off her hair and disguise herself as a boy?—Am I not just explaining it to you?

Will you explain that?

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—Give your answer, please, to that question. I did not think you understood it, and Mr. Muir was right to repeat it?—I explained this to her; she told me, of course, that she had made a statement, the same as I had; I explained to her that that statement involved her in describing that she lived with me, and that my statement gave the same, and that there would be a scandal which would turn her folks against her, and that Mr. Dew had said that if I did not produce Mrs. Crippen there would be trouble for me, and the only way I saw for us would be to escape this by going away to another place where we could be alone and start a new life together.

By Mr. MUIR—Both of you disguised?—Both of us disguised.

And you hoped unrecognisably disguised?—Quite so, so far as getting out of London was concerned; I never thought of any disguise after that.

That is all you told her to persuade her to do that?—That is all.

Will you look at the card, exhibit 2 (handed). When did you write that? Inspector Dew arrived on board on 31st July?—I wrote it then on the 30th.

Whose idea was it that you should write this card?—The sailor, or rather the quartermaster, suggested to me that I must leave something to show that I was going to jump overboard.

Was it his idea or your idea?—Well, it was my idea to put it in this way; it was his suggestion.

That you should leave something behind you?—Something behind me, some writing, he said, to show that I was going to jump overboard.

The language of it entirely your own?—Quite so.

And without a suggestion from the quartermaster?—Yes.

What time on 30th July did you have your first communication with the quartermaster?—It was along towards noon some time—about noon.

Where were you when the quartermaster spoke to you?—I was sitting just behind the captain's cabin.

This communication made by the quartermaster entirely without invitation from you?—Yes.

What was it the quartermaster said to you?—He said, "I have a letter I want to give you about three o'clock," then at three o'clock I went to the little room that was in front of the captain's cabin; it is a wheelroom; I do not know what you call it, a room where there is a wheel.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—The wheelhouse?—That is it—the wheelhouse. He gave me this letter to read, and in the letter it said that the captain knew who I was, and that the police were coming to arrest me at

Quebec, and that if I liked he would stow me away and smuggle me ashore at Montreal.

By Mr. Muir—Was it signed?—I do not remember whether it was signed or not.

By the Lord Chief Justice—That was his suggestion?—It was his suggestion.

It did not come from you?—Not from me.

By Mr. Muir—Was it signed?—The letter was not signed, and he took it right back again; he seemed afraid to trust me with it.

What was his name?—I do not know his name; I would not know his name.

How many quartermasters were there?—I think there were four.

How many did you see?—I believe there were four; I think I saw four different ones.

What was this one like?—He was little taller than I am, very thick set, dark; that is the nearest description I can give.

Any hair on his face?—Yes, he had a moustache.

Is that all?—That is all.

Had any of the other quartermasters got moustaches?—Yes.

All of them?—I think they all had; I am not sure.

All dark?—I cannot say. I particularly noticed him because I spotted him to remember him the next day.

Were all the quartermasters dark?—I could not say.

All thick set?—No, some of them were tall, and some of them were short.

Was this man the tallest or the shortest of them?—He was a medium [illegible]

Were any of the others medium?—I think there was another medium size man, and I think the other two were tall men, one was a very tall man.

You would have no difficulty in distinguishing this man if you saw him?—Not if I saw him.

Did he tell you what you were going to be arrested for?—He did not.

And you had no idea?—Any more than the suspicions I have already given you.

You intended this document to be found by the police officers?—Well, I had arranged that it should be found, so that Miss Le Neve would say she found it the next morning.

And hand it to the police?—Yes.

So that the police would believe what was stated in it?—Yes.

And would understand it?—Yes.

Would understand what it meant?—They would understand what it meant, because the quartermaster was to say that I had jumped overboard.

And would understand what was expressed in it here?—Yes.

"I cannot stand the horrors I go through every night any longer." What horrors were you going through every night?—The fear of arrest; I was not going through any horrors every night; it was purely imaginative.

What horrors did you mean the police to understand that you were going through every night?—That they were coming to arrest me.

What horrors did you mean the police to understand you were going

through every night, which you could not stand any longer?—The dread of arrest.

For some unknown offence?—Yes; I have already explained that.

"I can see nothing bright ahead, and money is coming to an end." It very nearly had, had it not?—No, indeed.

How much had you left?—There was some 70 dollars, I believe, and about £90 worth of diamonds. That is hardly "at an end."

"I have made up my mind to jump overboard to-night. I know I have spoilt your life, but hope some day you will learn to forgive me; the last word, Love, your H." That was all pretence?—Certainly.

And the horrors were the horrors of your imagination entirely?—Yes.

You had arranged this with Miss Le Neve?—Yes.

That she was to remain on board and carry on the pretence?—Yes.

Now, that card looks as if you were confessing your guilt of some offence, does it not?—It was intended to do that.

Intended to make the police believe that you had confessed to your guilt and jumped overboard?—Well, I should not have put that interpretation upon it; probably you do.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Just listen. The card is supposed to be left and picked up by a policeman?—Quite so.

What Mr. Muir puts to you is, would it not convey to that man the idea that you had jumped overboard because of your horrors?—Well, I have explained what horrors——

No, no! answer Mr. Muir's question. What do you say it would convey to the policeman?—Well, I cannot answer it in that way; I do not know how to answer it.

By Mr. Muir—Now, you have given your explanation of that card in the witness-box yesterday?—Yes.

For the first time?—The first time. I could not give it before, because I was not in the witness-box before.

Did you get into communication with the solicitor who is now defending you on 2nd or 3rd August?—Yes.

By telegram?—Yes.

From him to you?—Yes.

Did you have further telegrams from him?—One more, I believe—one other.

And a letter or letters?—Yes.

Did you write to him while you were in Canada?—I did.

And did you see him soon after your arrival in London?—The next Sunday.

Has he been conducting and had charge of your defence ever since?—He has.

By the Lord Chief Justice—How many days after you arrived was it that you saw him; you say it was the next Sunday?—The next day, the Sunday would be the next day; I arrived on the Saturday night.

By Mr. Muir—Were you asked before the magistrate whether you desired to give evidence?—I do not think I was. I did not hear any such request as that.

Did you desire to give evidence before the magistrate?—Not before the magistrate; no.

Evidence for Defence.

Were you asked whether you had any statement to make before the magistrate?—I do not think I was.

Did you know that you could give evidence if you wanted to?—I did not know that I could before the magistrate. It was not mentioned between my solicitor and myself at all.

Were you offered the opportunity of attending the coroner's inquest?—Yes.

And did you decline to attend it?—I declined to attend it, through the advice of my solicitor. He said it was not necessary for me to go; otherwise I should have gone. I did intend to go at first.

Did you ask your solicitor to find this quartermaster?—No, I did not. As soon as I arrived I explained to him, and I left it entirely in his hands.

So that your solicitor knew about this quartermaster as soon as you arrived?—The same Sunday.

Do you know that the "Montrose" has been in London twice since then?—No; I know she has been here once, through seeing it in the papers. I saw in the papers that the captain was here, but I did not know until some one called my attention to a paragraph in the papers stating that the "Montrose" had sailed somewhere from London—I did not know before that that she had been in London.

So far as you know, has any effort been made to bring that quartermaster here?—No, not so far as I know.

Of course, you understand that if your wife is alive there is no foundation for this charge at all?—Decidedly not.

And that if she could be found you would at once be acquitted of it?—Oh, rather.

What steps have been taken by you to find your wife?—I have not taken any steps.

So far as you know, has anybody else taken any steps to find your wife?—Not that I know. I have left myself entirely in my solicitor's hands. I have made no efforts of any kind—in fact, I could not.

Was Mrs. Ginnette a great friend of your wife's?—Yes.

She is well known in the theatrical profession—the music hall profession especially—in America?—No, not to my knowledge; she is well known on this side; I do not know about the other side.

Did you see her in Quebec?—I saw her in Quebec; that is, she came to the room where I was, but I did not speak to her.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Do you mean you could not speak to her, or that you could have spoken, and did not?—I think she asked if she could speak to me, and she was told she could not.

By Mr. Muir—She was in the same room with you?—Yes.

As near to you as I am now?—More near than that.

For how long?—A few minutes.

At that time you knew you were charged with the murder of your wife?—Yes.

Did you ask Mrs. Ginnette to try and find your wife?—I could not speak to Mrs. Ginnette.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Just answer the question first: did you ask Mrs. Ginnette?—I did not, because I supposed that I should not be allowed to speak to her.

Never mind about supposing; you did not speak to her. Why did you not speak to her?—Because I supposed I would not be allowed to speak to her.

By Mr. Mum—Did Mrs. Ginnette come into this room and ask to speak to you?—I do not know what she came into the room for. She came into the room and sat down, and I heard her speak, I think it was to Inspector M'Carthy; I am not sure, but I understood her to ask could she speak to me, and I thought he said no; but I know she did not speak to me, and consequently I did not speak to her.

Now, if your wife was alive and in America, there was her friend Mrs. Ginnette, who is an American, is she not?—She was in America then.

Her headquarters are New York?—Yes.

Could she not have found your wife for you?—I do not know.

Or try?—She could have tried, but I did not speak to her, because I supposed I could not.

Mrs. Mills and Mr. Mackamotzki are all living in New York, the step-father, the half-sister, and the sister of your wife?—Yes.

Was any application made to them to find your wife?—No.

Did you ask Chief Inspector Dew to try and find your wife?—Yes, we discussed the matter. I asked him if he could not find her by applying to the police in Chicago.

When?—When he was at the house in Hilldrop Crescent.

That was when the advertisement was prepared?—Yes.

And left behind by you?—Yes.

Now, Mrs. Nash—Lilian Hawthorne—she was a great friend of your wife?—Yes. I have not seen her since the arrest.

Did you see her and her husband on 28th June?—I did.

Had they just come back from America?—They told me so.

At that time, 28th June, you were representing that your wife had been in America and had died there?—Yes.

Was that the first time you had seen her since your wife's death?—Since her disappearance.

Since her death was announced?—Yes.

And was Mrs. Nash much distressed?—I do not know that she seemed very much distressed.

Were you very much distressed?—Well——

Did you sob with grief in the presence of Mr. and Mrs. Nash?—No, I did not.

Sobbing with grief, I suggest to you you were, in the presence of Mr. and Mrs. Nash on the 28th June?—I was not.

Were they pressing you for particulars of where your wife died?—They were.

Did they say that they had just come back from America?—Yes.

Did they tell you that they could find no trace of her?—No.

Did they tell you that they had seen Mrs. Ginnette?—They told me they had seen Mrs. Ginnette, yes.

And that Mrs. Ginnette had heard nothing of your wife being in America, or having been in America?—No.

Or having died there?—They did not tell me that.

Evidence for Defence.

They pressed you very much, did they not, for particulars?—They pressed me for particulars, but they did not tell me that.

Did you know that they were going back to America?—I did not.

That was 28th June?—Yes; at least, I accept your statement; I do not know the date myself.

When did you first think of prescribing hyoscin for your patients?—Well, the first I knew of hyoscin as a prescription, as a treatment at all, was in 1885.

Here, in London?—Here in London.

Yes?—It was early in January.

Of this year?—Yes.

For how long had you been prescribing for patients in London?—Well, I had been treating patients chiefly for ear troubles for a very long time, but not in a general way.

How long had you been prescribing medicines for patients in London?—I had not been prescribing any special remedies; I have been prescribing Munyon's remedies for—well, ever since I have been here.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Just confine yourself to the question. You were asked not about selling remedies, but about prescribing for patients, that is, making up prescriptions?—When I prescribed for the patients I always prescribed Munyon's remedies up to about that time.

By Mr. Muir—Am I right in taking it that you mean that before 1910 you had no patients for whom you made up prescriptions?—Oh, yes, I had patients.

For how long before January, 1910?—Well, I only made an occasional rule of doing so for—well, three to six months maybe; I would not like to fix a date.

Approximately six months?—Three to six months, but I did not make it a rule to do as I did afterwards; I can explain to you why.

Did you do it through the post?—Yes.

How did you get into touch with those patients?—Through Munyon's letters.

Do you mean through their answering the advertisements?—Yes, I was acting as their medical adviser.

Did you see them personally, or was it conducted by correspondence?—Very few personally—most by correspondence.

You would have to have their names and addresses in order to send them the remedies?—I did not send the remedies.

Who sent them off?—They had what we called a despatching clerk.

Who was that?—That was in Munyon's office.

Who was it?—I do not know her last name; her name is Maggie.

Was she in the employ when you last were there?—Yes.

Where did you usually get the addresses from?—From the letters.

The letters would be kept?—Yes.

They will be in existence now?—Yes.

So that you can give the names of the persons to whom you sent those remedies, and their addresses?—If I went and looked them up.

Have you asked anybody to look them up? Had you told anybody before this?—I think my solicitor has been in communication with Munyons on the question.

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

So that if the names and addresses of the persons for whom you prescribed are in existence, he would know them?—He would have been able to find them, I believe.

Were you prescribing hyoscin for any of those patients?—Yes.

As a medicine?—Yes.

To be administered through the mouth?—Decidedly.

For what disease?—Nervous diseases—coughs of a septic character—and asthmatic complaints.

Is there any pharmacopœia or medical work that you can refer to which advises the administration of hyoscin through the mouth for any disease whatever?—I think if you refer to Hempel and Arndt's "Dictionary of Homœopathic Therapeutics" you will find under the article "Hyoscyamine" mention of hyoscyamine as being used in nervous diseases.

Hyoscyamine and hyoscin are two totally different things; I am asking you about hyoscin?

The Lord Chief Justice—This is very important with reference to a question put by one of the jurymen yesterday. If there is any book in which hyoscin is described or indicated as a medicine to be given by the mouth, you had better produce it?—I have said that I think you will find it in that book.

By Mr. Muir—Hyoscyamine you refer to?—No—hyoscin.

You are talking about a book; what is the book?—It is a homœopathic book.

Where is it?—I have not seen a copy of it for ten or fifteen years.

The Lord Chief Justice—This is a very vital matter for you, Dr. Crippen. If there is any book in which hyoscin is prescribed for use in this way, you had better produce the book. All you say is that you think there is such a book, but you have not seen it for twelve years.

Mr. Muir—Fifteen years I think he said.

By the Lord Chief Justice—What is the book that you are thinking of?—Hempel and Arndt's, I think the title is "The Dictionary of Homœopathic Materia Medica"; it is a book in several volumes.

The Lord Chief Justice—We will have that book sent for.

Mr. Muir—I have not got that book, my lord.

The Lord Chief Justice—Mr. Tobin, if there be such a book you had better have it sent for. It may be important.

By Mr. Muir—Now, as I understand your evidence given yesterday, you put up into pillules some two-thirds of the 5 grains of hyoscin that you bought?—No, I said all of it. Wait a moment. I do not think you comprehend the way in which I prepared it.

As I understood your evidence—of course, I may have totally misunderstood it—you put it into pillules?—I see what you mean, yes; I had used about two-thirds of the quantity.

What became of the remaining third?—It was left in the office when I went away.

It ought to be there now?—I should think it would be.

Have you directed any search to be made for it?—I have not.

Nor suggested to anybody that it should be searched for?—Yes, Mr. Newton has gone there to look.

Evidence for Defence.

Has he found it?—He told me that he could not find any of my bottles that I left there.

Where did you leave this quantity of hyoscin?—It was in a cabinet in my private room.

Can you give a number to the room?—Room 58.

Albion House?—Yes.

Who besides yourself ever used that room?—Well, up to about three weeks before I left nobody but myself used that room.

The last three weeks?—The last three weeks I had put a dental chair in there, and occasionally used it as an extra room.

By the Lord Chief Justice—What you are asked is, did anybody use it besides yourself?—It was then occasionally u d for dental patients.

By whom?—By an assistant.

What is his name?—I am very bad at names; perhaps Mr. Newton can help me on that.

Mr. Newton—Was it Long?

The Witness—No, not Long; there was Dr. Rylance—oh, it was Coulthard; that is the name; I have got it.

By Mr. Muir—Was that room locked when you left it?—Never locked—well, my rooms were always locked at night.

Who had the key?—Long had the key.

Was that one of the keys that you sent him in the envelope?—No; these were the keys of the house.

Will you look at exhibit 38 (handed). You wanted this hyoscin, as I understand you, for a perfectly legitimate purpose?—Quite so.

"Name of purchaser, Munyons, per H. H. Crippen"?—Yes, I always bought my drugs in that way.

"Address of purchaser, rooms 57 and 61"?—"57 to 61," which includes my own offices and Munyons.

"Purpose for which it is required, homœopathic preparations"?—Yes.

Have you got any of those homœopathic preparations left?—Do you mean in my office?

Which contained hyoscin?—I have already given that answer.

Pardon me, will you answer this question, have you got anywhere left any homœopathic preparation into which you put this hyoscin?—They were all sent out as they were made.

You have none left?—I have none left.

Have you got here any patient to whom you sent such homœopathic preparations?—Mr. Newton has been looking the matter up; I do not know.

Re-examined by Mr. Tobin—You arrived in England on Saturday, 27th August?—Yes.

And were then taken into custody?—Yes.

And from that moment onwards you have been kept in prison?—Right.

The day after your arrival Mr. Newton saw you in the prison cells?—Yes.

And from that moment has he conducted your defence and looked after your interests?—Entirely.

He appeared for you before the magistrate?—Yes.

And he watched your interests at the coroner's inquiry?—Yes; I left everything to him.

One other point as regards dates. On 21st September you were committed for trial by the magistrate on this charge?—Yes.

And on 26th September the coroner's inquiry concluded?—Yes.

Five days later?—Yes.

As regards your making up prescriptions, for how many years about have you been making up prescriptions for patients?—Well, off and on—do you mean for treatment by correspondence—for treatment by post?

By the Lord Chief Justice—Sending people prescriptions; that is what Mr. Tobin means—not a remedy, but a prescription?—Oh, seventeen or eighteen years.

By Mr. Tobin—I have here some glasses. What d you call this? Is that a graduated ,lass?—Yes, a graduated measure.

That is used f . prescriptions?—Yes, for measuring prescriptions.

How long have you had that about?——

The Lord Chief Justice—You must ask him first, is that one that he had?

The Witness—That is one that I used as a measure for ounces; that is an ounce measure.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Where did it come from?—We had that in Munyons.

But where did you get it from to give to Mr. Newton?—I think Mr. Newton got it himself from my office.

That is what I thought. You may say that you had glasses like that, but you do not know where that has come from?—I do not know where that particular one came from, no.

By Mr. Tobin—Now, had you constantly things like that glass which I show you?—Yes.

Will you tell the jury what it is called?—This is a dropper; it is used for drops; it is so that you can get a drop at a time.

When you release your finger a drop comes out?—Yes.

Then there are three other things. Will you tell the Court what they are called?—These are testing glasses.

You had testing tubes, too?—Yes.

Now, was there something that you sent to patients called "ohrshob"?—Yes.

Is that a thing that you made up yourself or not?—Decidedly yes—entirely myself.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Is that an ear salve?—It was known under the name of ohrshob as a special preparation.

"Ohr," of course, is the German for "ear." What does "shob" mean?—It comes from "absorb"; there is the German word for "ear," and then "absorb."

By Mr. Tobin—Was that something that you prescribed for deafness?—Yes.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Has ohrshob got hyoscin in it?—No.

Evidence for Defence.

By Mr. Tobin—I have a number of letters here. Is that one of the letters from some patient?—Yes, that is one.

What is the date of it; you will find the date at the top, I think, the 3rd October, 1908; is that right?—There is another date here, when the letter was looked up again on the 6th January, 1909.

The date I saw was the 3rd October, 1908?—That is the date of the letter.

The Lord Chief Justice—Let us keep to what is material. [illegible] this prove more than that he had prescribed for people?

Mr. Tobin—Nothing else, my lord.

The Lord Chief Justice—You can take it generally that [illegible] scribe for people. (*To Witness*)—Is that so?—I have, yes.

You had communicated with the patients in writing, [illegible] scribed for them?—Yes, for a very long time.

By Mr. Tobin—Is there any letter that you know of [illegible] anything that you prescribed containing hyoscin?—There [illegible] of letters with registered on the back, "Special nerve remedy." [illegible] should be plenty of those; it would not refer to "hyoscin."

I have a number of letters here; you know what they are?—Yes.

They relate to prescriptions?—Yes.

The point is this, do any of those letters that I have got here, so far as you know, refer to prescriptions made up by you, containing hyoscin?—There must be some there.

Where did you get this hyoscin?——

The Lord Chief Justice—Do keep to one thing at a time. I want you to have every opportunity—it is most important that you should. If there is anything that he swears relates to a preparation containing hyoscin the date is of importance, and you are entitled to refer to it; but simply to say that you have a number of letters from patients carries it no further than you have got in the general answer—that he has for many years prescribed for patients.

Mr. Tobin—My lord, I only wanted to find out which letter, if any, in this bundle refers to some prescription containing hyoscin. (*To Witness*)—Can you tell me by looking?—I think I can.

I want anything which refers to a prescription containing hyoscin. Could you tell by looking?—I should by looking.

These are letters from patients, are they?—Yes. (A number of letters were handed to the witness.) No, these are not the letters that would refer to that.

I have no other letters. Were there any other letters?—They were all in Munyons' files, not my files; those come from my personal files.

My friend Mr. Muir points out this one to me; will you look at it. You mentioned yesterday the name of M'Sweeney. I do not know whether that letter—(handed)—bears in any way on the question whether you prescribed hyoscin?—Yes, that is right.

By the Lord Chief Justice—What is the date?—31st January, 1910. You will see "nerve tonic" there.

By Mr. Tobin—Do you remember when you first began to use hyoscin?—About seventeen or eighteen years ago, when I was preparing remedies for Munyons in the laboratory.

In England or America?—In America.

You did use it in America?—Yes, in a similar manner to what I used it here.

This is a letter from a gentleman named M'Sweeney in August, 1909; that does not refer to it at all. of course; but on the back of it——?—On the back there is registered the prescription and the date.

On the back there is this—"January 10th, Vilatiser; 31st, 4s. 6d. Sp. 1." What is that?—"Special."

Is that your handwriting?—No; that is the girl who registered this for me.

"4s. 6d. Sp. 1 Blood and Nerve Tonic." What do you say that was?—That is one of the remedies which contained hyoscin; there should be many other letters.

The Lord Chief Justice—I will admit that, as far as it goes, but it is not his entry at all; it is the entry of somebody else that she sent out a special nerve tonic.

By Mr. Tobin—How long have you been in England—do you say ten years?—More than that—twelve.

Fifteen years, about?—Yes.

Is hyoscin a thing that you regularly kept in your place, or only very seldom?—No, I never kept it until lately.

The Lord Chief Justice—You forget his answer yesterday. He said that he bought it in America, but never in England until 19th January. You cannot put to him that he regularly kept it.

By Mr. Tobin—Why did you buy it in England?—Because I wanted to prepare some special nerve remedies for some very obstinate cases.

Obstinate cases of what?—Nerve diseases, spasmodic ailments.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Now, Dr. Crippen, listen to me. We have heard a description of your wife and her habits by these witnesses as to her vivacious manner and bright spirits, and all that. Apart from the quarrels with you, which I quite understand, you agree in that description, I understand?—Yes.

To her friends she was amiable and pleasant?—Yes, to the outside world she was extremely amiable and pleasant.

To the outside world extremely amiable and popular?—Yes.

As she has been described, quite bright and vivacious?—Occasionally she had quarrels with her friends, and would not speak to them for a time.

This skeleton in the house and quarrel with you were not known to her friends I gather?—Not at all.

Was she fond of jewellery?—She was very anxious to have plenty to wear.

And fond of dress?—Very fond of fine clothes if she could get them.

And very fond of jewellery?—Yes.

You came back on the evening of 1st February and found she had gone. You had no idea of her going until you found she had gone?—No, any more than she had done before.

She had threatened you so often before that you thought it was only her threat?—That is all.

Did you examine the house?—Yes, I went right through the house.

Evidence for Defence.

Were her clothes in the usual place, hanging up?—No; in the back bedroom, where she kept most of her clothes, there were lots of clothes strewn about.

Are you able to tell us of any clothes that she took away?—No, she had an immense lot of clothes; I could not define any special clothes that she took.

Are you able to tell us whether on that evening you discovered that any trunk had been taken away?—No, I could not swear to that.

Of course, it is extremely important for your own interests if you can do it, and I thought I had better ask you. Did you ascertain that night that any trunk or any quantity of clothes had been taken from the house?—No, I did not see any; I mean to say, I did not miss any.

Except the few rings and the watch that she had before her marriage, according to you, all the jewellery was left behind?—Yes.

She had been wearing this jewellery previously on her visits to these people?—Yes.

Where did you find that?—I found it up in her bedroom.

Now, I want to put to you again specifically what Mr. Muir has put to you—that your wife, having threatened many times to go, had at last gone; did you take no steps to find out where she had gone?—No, I did not.

Whether she had gone abroad?—No, because she had been threatening to go so often.

But you took no steps?—No, I took no steps.

Then I understand you to say that you took no steps right away up to the 8th of July?—No, not at all.

Now, up to the 8th of July I understand you had no idea of changing your name?—Not at all.

Or disguising yourself?—Not at all.

Or disguising Miss Le Neve?—Not at all.

You had heard nothing to arouse your suspicions at all?—No charge was made, and I never expected one; I had no reason.

Except this—what you have described very properly as a mass of wicked lies—you had nothing to disturb your mind at all?—Nothing to disturb my mind in any way.

Now, I want you to tell the jury, please, the upshot of what Mr. Dew said to you on the 8th which alarmed you. I want you to repeat all that he said which you say alarmed you?—Mr. Dew said to me that if I could not find my wife there would be very serious trouble in store for me.

Anything else?—Well, he repeated that in two or three different forms, but that is the gist of what he said to me.

Do you represent to the jury that a woman who was, we will say, going wrong, or had got rulations with another man, is anything uncommon or extraordinary?—Do I think it is anything uncommon?

Yes. You know you have spoken of it in answer to Mr. Muir as a scandal; but, assuming that your wife had left to go with another man, do you represent—you are a man of the world—that that is anything uncommon?—I do not think it is anything uncommon, but I am very sensitive to any censure or any scandal of that kind.

I quite understand it, and you tried to get rid of that scandal by what

you said. I want you to tell the jury what was the charge which up to that time you thought might be brought against you when Mr. Dew told you that there would be trouble on 8th July?—I did not think there was any specific charge, except that I might be arrested and held on suspicion. I do not know law at all; but, of course, I have been a reader of romances to a great extent, and I had an idea that I might be arrested and held on suspicion until she was found.

You ask the jury to believe that that was your motive in going away—because you thought you might be arrested and held on suspicion?—On suspicion, yes.

I gather that up to Dew's coming to your house you had no suspicion or fear of any kind?—Not at all, not the slightest.

Now, I also understand you to tell Mr. Muir that if those pyjamas were bought after 1905, how they got into your cellar you cannot explain?—No, I have no idea.

Now, I must ask you a question or two about the last part of your evidence to Mr. Muir, and also your answers to Mr. Tobin. Did you keep a prescription book or not?—No, I never kept a prescription book.

Did you write out any prescriptions?—No.

Never?—Homœopathic physicians do not write out prescriptions.

I did not ask you about what homœopathic physicians did. When you talk of prescriptions for patients you mean sending out medicines, do you?—I mean preparing and sending medicines. The word "prescription" is a wrong word.

Now, you told us yesterday that you never bought any hyoscin in England until 19th January?—Yes.

Did you ever buy any afterwards?—No.

You were in England for nearly six months, from 19th January to 8th of July?—Yes.

And you did not buy any during that time?—No.

Were you going on prescribing this remedy?—Yes.

You bought no more?—No, there was still some left.

I am not speaking only of what was left, but of the things that were made up. Was the cabinet locked?—No, the cabinet was not locked.

Was there any other poisonous stuff—I mean drugs which might be poisonous, but used for medicine—in the cabinet besides the hyoscin?—There was some aconite, some gelsemium, some belladonna——

All left by you?—All left by me, yes.

Now, you told Mr. Muir that you spent the £80 and the £115 partly in advertisements—the greater part, you said?—The greater part in advertising.

Have you any account with anybody for the advertisements?—The books will all be found in my office.

I am not speaking of the books in your office; I am speaking of the evidence here. Have you any one who will come and speak to your spending money in advertisements?—Well, outside the advertising, I can give the names of the papers; will that do?

You can do what you like. I am asking you this question. If you know how much you paid to any particular man it would be of some

Evidence for Defence.

importance to you. Are any of the people here to whom you paid money?—In Court, no.

Are any of the people to whom you paid money after 31st January, or 2nd of February to be quite accurate, coming as your witnesses or not?—No, I am not calling such witnesses.

You told Mr. Muir, and I think you told me too, that the first you heard of Mr. Newton was by telegram?—Yes.

At Quebec?—Yes.

Did you know him before?—Well, I knew him as a reputable——

I did not ask you whether you knew him by reputation; did you know him personally?—I met him about twelve years ago, I think, in opposition to me in a case I had at Marlborough Street.

Nobody is disputing his ability or his position—not the least in the world. I am referring to an answer which I did not understand at first. You said you got a telegram from Mr. Newton?—Yes.

Do you know how he came to telegraph to you?—Yes, one of my friends asked him to telegraph to me.

Do you know who that friend is?—Yes.

You can give his name if necessary; I do not ask for more than that?—Yes.

Then having received a telegram from him, you replied to it?—I immediately replied asking him to conduct my defence.

And, as you have told Mr. Muir and Mr. Tobin, since you have been home you have told him everything you could?—Told him everything, and left everything entirely in his hands.

As you have told us, of course, you know the gravity of this charge, and that if you found your wife there is an end to the whole thing?—Yes.

Why did you not let that advertisement that you drafted on 8th of July go to the Press?—Because I——

Just think before you answer. You are urged by Dew to find your wife?—To do the best I could.

You believing her to be alive?—Believing her to be alive.

You draft the advertisement?—Yes.

Why did you not send it to the Press?—I left it there because I left it behind me when I went away, and I thought it was no use my bothering.

I have put this to you in order to understand your position, and I am anxious to do so. The first suspicion that passed your mind was on the 8th?—Yes.

After this long interview you were desired by Dew to find your wife, and an advertisement is drawn up; why did you not advertise for her—you had not changed your name then; why did not you advertise for her?—Because I dropped the matter at once when I went away.

But you had not gone on the 8th, and you said to Mr. Muir that you did not make up your mind to go until the morning of the 9th?—I did not think they would bother with me after I got out of England.

You did not think if you got out of England the police would trouble any more about it?—I did not think they would trouble any more; I did not think the case was of sufficient importance to them for that.

Why did you go by Antwerp?—Because I thought I could get a cheap trip that way; in fact, it was a very cheap trip.

Did you find out that there was a boat going from Antwerp?—Oh, I had been that way before.

Did you know when the boat sailed?—No, I did not know till after I was there.

After you disguised Miss Le Neve, as you told us, you passed under a false name?—Yes, after that time.

[A communication from the jury was handed to his lordship.]

The LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—Your question, sir, is a little argumentative, but I will put it to him.

(*To Witness*)—You say that you remember Hempel & Arndt's book?—Yes.

Which you have not seen for fifteen years?—Yes.

Do you remember what the contents of the book were as regards quantities or anything of that kind?—Do you mean as to hyoscin?

Yes, I do?—No, I cannot remember now.

What?—I cannot remember what the doses were.

I will put the question suggested (a very proper question) in a different way. Can you tell us any work which tells people the safe quantity of hyoscin that can be used by the mouth as distinguished from the dangerous quantity?—I will deal with it in this way. I may say there are what we may call two classes of medicines, allopathic and homœopathic.

You had better answer the question first?—I cannot answer it.

Can you mention any book which tells you the safe quantity of hyoscin to be used?—Yes, the British Pharmacopœia tells the safe quantity.

A JUROR—I understand that the prisoner said that he got the information about hyoscin from this particular publication that he has mentioned——

The LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—Yes.

The JUROR—What we want to know is, if he can remember after all these years the particular quantity of hyoscin that would be safely used in administering the drug.

The LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—Quite right, but that is a matter of comment. If we are to have that, we must have the book here.

(*To Witness*)—Do you know whether that book gave you the safe quantity or not?—They would only recommend——

Do you know?—They do not recommend the doses in those books. If you would not mind my explaining, I could put it very clearly.

You may explain if you wish?—The allopathic books give you a specific dose, but the homœopathic books simply say, "an infinitesimal dose," which means a very minute dose like the 10,000th of a grain.

Will you call attention to any book that recommends hyoscin as a drug to be taken internally? You say Hempel & Arndt's book did so; if so, you must produce it?—That is the only one I can think of at the present time.

Dr. GILBERT MAITLAND TURNBULL, examined by Mr. TOBIN—I am director of the Pathological Institute at the London Hospital. The conducting of post-mortem examinations falls to my department. I am Master of Arts, a Doctor of Medicine, a Bachelor of Surgery of the University of Oxford, a member of the Royal College of Surgeons, London, a licentiate

Evidence for Defence.

Dr. Turnbull

of the Royal College of Physicians, and I am also a member of the Pathological Society of Great Britain, which is the largest pathological institute in the United Kingdom. In 1907, 1908, and 1909 the average number of post-mortem examinations made under my supervision was 1251 each year. Complete microscopic investigations are carried out under my supervision. I devote the whole of my time to that and to the microscopic examination of similar material that is sent down by the surgeons. I have on three occasions—9th September, 15th and 17th October—seen the piece of skin and flesh that is now shown to me. On 9th September a slice about 4½ inches long was made across that piece of skin by Mr. Pepper. That slice goes across the right hand of what has been called the horse-shoe depression as the skin lies on the tray. The cut does not go across the folded side of the so-called horse shoe which Mr. Pepper thinks is a scar—it goes across and beyond on each side of the so-called scar. There is another cut through this other limb of the depression which was made by Dr. Spilsbury; I think it is said that Dr. Spilsbury made it the same day. That cut goes beyond the fold on either side, and goes outside it on each side. I have examined the portions removed by this cut and a third cut that was made. First of all, one single long cut was made at our request. There was a piece removed, up by the fold, and then a second piece from the so-called scar, and then a third piece from the edge, completely outside the scar. I have examined those three bits with the microscope.

Does your microscopical examination enable you to say whether that is a scar in fact, or which one of those bits was cut?—It enables me to say that it cannot possibly be a scar. I have formed that opinion because of certain structures which are found in this area which is described as a scar, and which have never been found in a scar before. First of all, there are two groups of hair follicles. In one group there are three hair follicles, and in the other there are two hair follicles. A hair follicle is the sheath round the hair. In these follicles or sheaths the hairs are also to be seen cut in cross-sections. In addition to that, one finds in two of the sections in relation to these hairs, as one would expect, a large piece of sebaceous gland, and then another large piece in another section of the same sebaceous or fatty gland.

By the Lord Chief Justice—In all that I am saying about the hair follicles I am referring to what I discovered on the piece which is cut through the mark. These are the structures—the hair follicles containing hairs and the sebaceous gland. There is another portion of a fatty tissue I might mention, I think, because it is a most important landmark, as it could not be present in a stretched scar—a bay or outer process of the fatty tissue which lies below this true skin which is found within the area, described as a scar. That could not exist, and it is an important landmark, because it may be found in the sections of all the six slices that have been cut. This portion of fatty tissue coming into the true skin, as it is called—we could tell by that landmark very clearly; we could trace through each of the six sections any structure that we see in one. Six strips have been taken from the piece cut along the mark, and they all show the fatty tissue.

Examination continued—Is there any other reason why you say that in your opinion that cannot have been a scar?—One of these reasons would be sufficient.

Dr. Turnbull

You are asked if there is any other. If there is another weaker reason I will not trouble, but are those the best?—Those are the best, and in my opinion they are conclusive. If that mark on one side is not in fact a scar it was caused by folding of the skin by pressure, which allowed the skin in that area to get somewhat dried; the juices, as it were, are somewhat dried. It is quite a practicable thing to handle that bit of skin to indicate how it was folded. [The witness indicated how it was folded.] That, in my opinion, would account for the mark which has been called a scar. There are markings near the so-called scar to indicate that there must have been pressure of some material. As to the pattern of the material, it is visible to the naked eye, as I explain to the jury. [The witness explained to the jury.]

Take now the clean long cut right through the area of the so-called scar and beyond it on each side—have you any remark to make about the cut edges shown by that long straight cut?—What I should like to say is that taking the two cuts, the one that passes through one groove and the other that passes through the other groove, examining the cut edges of these cuts in both grooves, one finds the same appearance.

By the Lord Chief Justice—You say that, taking right through the area of the so-called scar and the cut of what is called the fold, you find the same appearance?—That is it.

Examination continued—If one cut had been really through a scar, would you expect the same appearance in both cuts or not?—No.

What different appearance would there have been in the cut through the so-called scar, if it really was a scar?—There would be no reason for a scar to have this clear, transparent, horny appearance that both these cut surfaces have. That is not the appearance of a scar in section at all; that is due to this drying from the folding.

By the Lord Chief Justice—If it was a scar I would not have expected the horny appearance which I find in both cuts.

Cross-examined by Mr. Muir—I am a qualified surgeon, but I never do any surgery; I am a specialist, and I only do this work. I cannot say definitely what part of the body that piece of skin comes from, but I have a very good idea. I think that the best explanation is that it comes from the lowest part of the abdomen.

Then you do agree that it comes from the lower part?—I will not disagree.

Do you, with your great experience, agree that it does come from the lower part of the abdomen?—I will admit——

I am not talking about what you admit; you are not here to make admissions. You are asked to say, with your great experience, to the best of your honest judgment, from what part that was taken?—Then I would say the abdomen.

The Lord Chief Justice—Please remember that you are not here as an advocate, but as a witness, and the word "admit" is not the right word to use.

By Mr. Muir—When I first examined that piece of flesh I formed a different opinion as to the part of the body it had come from. I put that opinion in writing, but I did not give a definite opinion. I have never

been present while Mr. Pepper, Dr. Spilsbury, or Dr. Willcox have been examined or cross-examined.

Was it by your wish that you were not present?—No, I cannot say that—well, I think I ought to modify that. It was not by my wish, but I think I had said before, at the very beginning, when I was asked to undertake this, that I hoped it would not mean having to give evidence.

Did you give your first opinion on that understanding?—I had been promised that I would not be called at all as a witness.

You gave your first opinion upon the understanding that you would not be called as a witness?—No, I would not say that. I went to see these remains on that understanding. I had been promised at the very start that I would not be called as a witness. Since then Mr. Pepper, Dr. Willcox, and Dr. Spilsbury have been cross-examined upon what was suggested in my opinion. I have not been present to hear the reasons they gave for their opinions, but I had a copy of their depositions sent to me.

After you had seen their answers to the questions put upon your opinion did you alter your opinion?—Not because of any such questions—oh, it must be so.

Please answer my question?—I altered my opinion considerably after the second time I examined that piece.

I asked you whether you altered your opinion after you had seen the reasons they gave for their opinions?—Yes, it must have been after that.

In your opinion which you first gave, did you state that the aponeurosis was absent from that piece of flesh?—No, I said that I thought there was an absence of the aponeurosis characteristic of the abdomen. There were aponeuroses there. My opinion now is that that is from the lower part of the abdominal wall.

Did you find there the abdominal muscle?—Which abdominal muscle?

The rectus abdominis?—Yes, I think so.

Is that muscle in life attached to the pubic bone by a tendon?—Yes.

Do you find there part of the tendon which had attached that muscle to the pubic bone?—I had not seen that.

Do you see it now?—No. [Dr. Spilsbury pointed out what was suggested as the tendon.]

By the Lord Chief Justice—Now, what is your answer?—It is not where I should expect it from the dissections I have made.

You are asked whether you can see the presence or traces of the presence of the tendon which attaches the muscle to the pubic bone. Your last answer is that the abdominal muscle is attached to the pubic bone by the tendon. Do you say that it is there or is not?—I do not think this is it.

You say you do not find it?—There is a tendon there, and if that is the rectus it is.

Please answer this one way or the other; it is most important. Do you find that tendon there or not?—Yes.

By Mr. Muir—Is that tendon attached to a muscle which is at present loose behind the piece of skin?—Yes.

If you pull that muscle down to what in life would be the bottom of the piece of flesh, does it come into the position in which it would be attached to the pubic bone? Pull it down now and then answer my ques-

tion?—It does not naturally; it pulls it out of position. You can pull it into that position.

If you pull it up as far as it will go in the other direction, in the direction of the navel, in what position is it?—It goes right up, nearly 4½ inches up.

Would it then be behind the navel?—It might be behind the navel.

Have you any doubt that this piece of skin is part of the abdomen?—Yes.

You have?—Yes.

The Lord Chief Justice—Do listen, Dr. Turnbull.

By Mr. Muir—What part of the body do you suggest it comes from if not from the abdomen?—I have told you, and I do not think you can have a better explanation.

What part does it come from if not from the abdomen?—From the upper part of the thigh.

The Lord Chief Justice—I am in a great difficulty here. I understood this witness to say in examination-in-chief that in his opinion this piece of skin did come from the abdominal wall. That was the best suggestion he could make. When I misunderstood Mr. Tobin's cross-examination, and thought that he suggested that it came from another part of the body, Mr. Tobin said that I was wrong. I think now we must proceed on the hypothesis that it does come from the abdominal wall, in accordance with the evidence of the other witnesses.

By Mr. Muir—Now, will you kindly read what you said in your original report about this piece of flesh not coming from the abdominal wall?—"We are of opinion that that skin does not come from the abdomen for the following reasons." (Reads.) That is a joint opinion along with Dr. Wall.

You now tell us that the characteristic aponeurosis is present in that piece of skin?—The aponeurosis, I think, is characteristic.

Was Dr. Wall also promised that he would not be called as a witness before he signed that report?—No, he was not.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I should say that I had had twenty minutes' examination of this specimen with Dr. Wall before I wrote the report in which I said that there was no aponeurosis present.

By Mr. Muir—Do you find on the side of that piece of flesh, which would be the left side in life, some transverse muscles on the deepest surface of the specimen?—Yes.

The fibres running in two directions, one super-imposed on the other?—In one direction, certainly.

Do those correspond with the fibres of the internal oblique muscle and the transversalis muscle of the abdomen?—They could, I think.

But do they?—It is really impossible to say that. They might correspond, but they are so altered that you cannot see.

If they do correspond, would that not show beyond question that they came from the abdominal wall?—Yes.

Do you find a mark on that piece of skin which shows the incision made for the purpose of an operation?—No.

Do you know the American method of stitching the abdominal wall

where it is cut open for the purposes of an operation, the method by which the stitches do not come to the surface except at the beginning and at the end?—There are several methods.

So that there would be only one stitch there if that method of operation were used?—Yes. I did not find the mark of a stitch there. In opening the wall of the abdomen for the purpose of an operation, first of all the incision is made, then the wall is pulled asunder, the organs are removed, and the abdominal wall is sewn up. It is not a common thing for part of the epidermis to be enfolded when the wall is sewn up again, but I have seen it happen in a few cases, very few. The surgeon always takes some instruments and turns up the edges to prevent that after he has put in the suture.

I put it to you that it is not at all uncommon in that condition?—I do not agree. Of course, it does happen, and I have seen the edges turned in.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Not quite the edges turned in, but the result of the edges being turned in is that a bit of the epidermis gets enfolded or below the folds of the scar?—I have only read of that.

By Mr. Muir—You have never seen it?—No.

So that you are not familiar with the appearance of such a case?—Yes, but not from operation; from accidents it is very familiar.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I am familiar with the appearance of an accident scar, not an operation scar—where the epidermis has got enfolded or below the folds of the scar.

By Mr. Muir—I am talking about an operation scar?—The appearances are similar.

How do you know if you have never seen them?—I have read about them. I have never seen an operation scar where part of the epidermis has been enfolded in the wound.

Then you cannot tell me what takes place when such a wound heals?—Yes, I have seen this phenomenon of which you are speaking when, for instance, a man has fallen upon his hand here and cut his hand, causing an incision like an operation, and it has been allowed to heal, and he has got such an included epidermis.

That is the nearest you have ever come to seeing such a case?—Yes.

Now, I put it to you that in such a case as I have described the inclusion of epidermis in the incision made for the purposes of an operation, was easily mistaken for sebaceous glands?—For one sebaceous gland, but not easily.

For sebaceous glands is my question?—No.

By the Lord Chief Justice—What Mr. Muir is putting to you is that where you get the flesh included you might find one or more sebaceous glands, what I will call in between the lips of the scar?—No, I would not agree with that at all. I think what he puts is that the appearance of such an incision might be mistaken for a sebaceous gland. Is that so?

Not for one sebaceous gland, but for sebaceous glands. Sebaceous glands are distributed over the epidermis, are they not?—Yes. Would you mind making this clearer to me?

Dr. Turnbull

You have said that it might be mistaken for one sebaceous gland, but not for more. We do not understand what you mean by that?—I know the appearance of these inclusions, because I know that the accidental ones are similar to those in operations. I have never seen one in an operation scar, but I have, of course, read about them. Such inclusion might by somebody unaccustomed to the microscope be mistaken.

By Mr. Muir—We are not talking about people unaccustomed to the microscope. We are talking about people like Mr. Spilsbury. I am suggesting to you that persons accustomed to the microscope might be deceived?—No, I will not agree with that. The epidermis is composed of cells, which are called epithelial cells. I do not think that those cells might be mistaken for sebaceous glands. The cells lining hair follicles have a similar appearance.

If the epithelial cells were included in a healed scar, might they not be mistaken for sebaceous glands or for hair follicles?—Not for hair follicles with the hair, because the hair has such a very special structure that you could not mistake it for anything else.

Not if included?—Not in an old scar, no. I do not think you understand.

I think I do. Pray give me the credit for understanding it.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Do not get into controversy with Mr. Muir; do not suggest that he does not understand what he is putting. You say not hair follicles?—No.

By Mr. Muir—I say no, because there is no resemblance; they would not be at all alike.

What is the difference?—Between a hair follicle with a hair and an included——

A hair follicle without a hair; I am talking of the hair follicle, not the hair. Might an epithelial cell not be mistaken for a hair follicle included in a clean scar?—Would you repeat the question to me?

No, sir, I will not. The horny appearance in that is due, you say, to drying?—Yes. The first occasion we saw it was on 9th September. It had been out of the grave since 14th July. I cannot remember what happened to it in between those two dates.

Might it have dried between those two dates?—No—the skin might have dried, yes.

Re-examined by Mr. Tobin—I was not present here in Court the first three days. My time is valuable, and I have duties to attend to. I was supplied by Mr. Newton with copies of the depositions, and I have been supplied daily during the progress of this trial with copies of the evidence of the medical gentlemen at the trial.

From start to finish, as regards the scar, have you ever wavered in your opinion that that was not a scar?—No.

By the Lord Chief Justice—You said in your first report that you and Dr. Wall were of opinion that no aponeurosis was present?—No characteristic aponeurosis. May I read my report again? "The aponeuroses, so characteristic of the abdominal wall, were not present." I definitely wrote a different opinion after the second examination on 15th March.

Up to that time you had let the advisers be under the opinion that

what you thought was the absence of aponeurosis was conclusive against it being the lower part of the stomach?—No, I had simply said——

Do attend. Had you told them you had changed your opinion before 18th October?—No.

Up to that time you had let Mr. Newton and the advisers be under the impression contained in your first opinion?—Yes—oh, no, I beg your pardon—I had asked Mr. Newton before if we could not see the specimen again to confirm our opinion.

When did you first communicate to Mr. Newton that that opinion of yours had changed?—On 15th October.

Now, I want Mr. Pepper to go beside the witness. It is unfortunate that you did not hear Mr. Pepper's evidence—I do not say that it is your fault at all. In the first place, let me ask this, have you yourself seen old scars of ovarian operations?—Yes.

Now, Mr. Pepper, will you kindly point out to the witness the three dimensions that you spoke of, and let Dr. Turnbull see what you mean. [Mr. Pepper did so.] Now, having had that pointed out by Mr. Pepper, I want to ask this, is it or is it not characteristic of abdominal operations that the scar is wider at the bottom than at the top?——

Mr. Pepper—Certainly.

The Lord Chief Justice—I did not ask you, Dr. Pepper. I was asking Dr. Turnbull.

Mr. Pepper—I beg your pardon, my lord.

The Lord Chief Justice—Perhaps you had better leave Dr. Turnbull now. Before you go you might point out the three points we were referring to. [Mr. Pepper showed by marking with pins the three positions, and the plate was handed to the jury.] Now, Dr. Turnbull, is it in accordance with your experience that the mark of a scar from ovariotomy is wider at the bottom of the abdomen, or the lower part of the abdomen, than it is higher up?—No. I have read that one of the witnesses here said that he had performed many hundreds of operations, and that the scar, as a rule, was wider at the bottom than it was at the top. I do not agree with that. I have never performed any operations myself, but I have examined scars of ovariotomy.

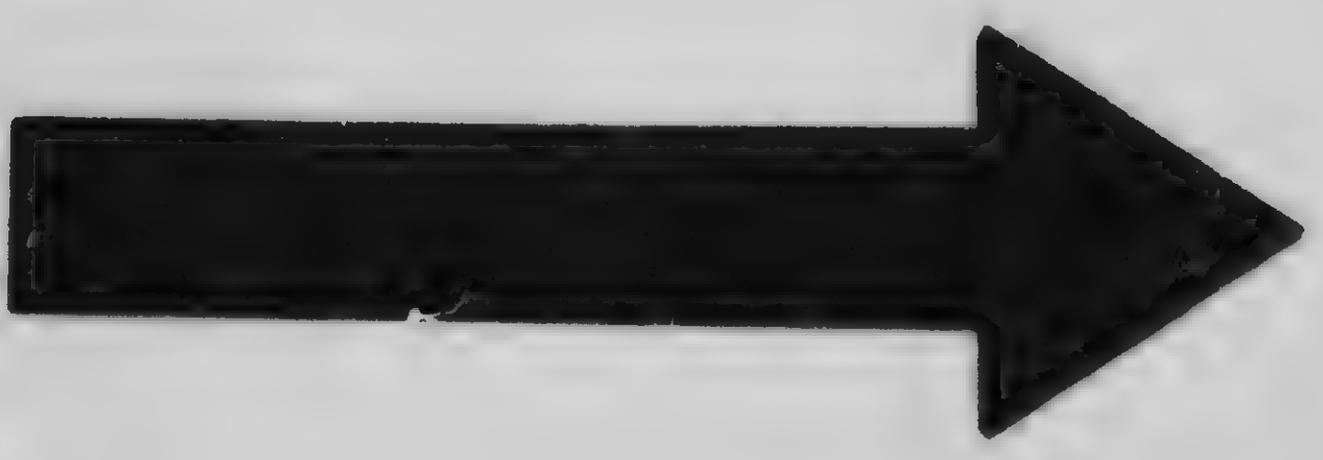
You say that that is untrue?—No, you asked for my experience; I do not say it is untrue. It is not my experience that the scar is generally wider at the bottom than at the top.

Does the fact that there is that difference of what I will call a mark affect your judgment at all?—Yes, if it is said to be a stretched scar, I should have thought it would be stretched to its widest in a different position.

I am talking about the scar on the lower part of the woman's stomach?—It might be stretched one inch.

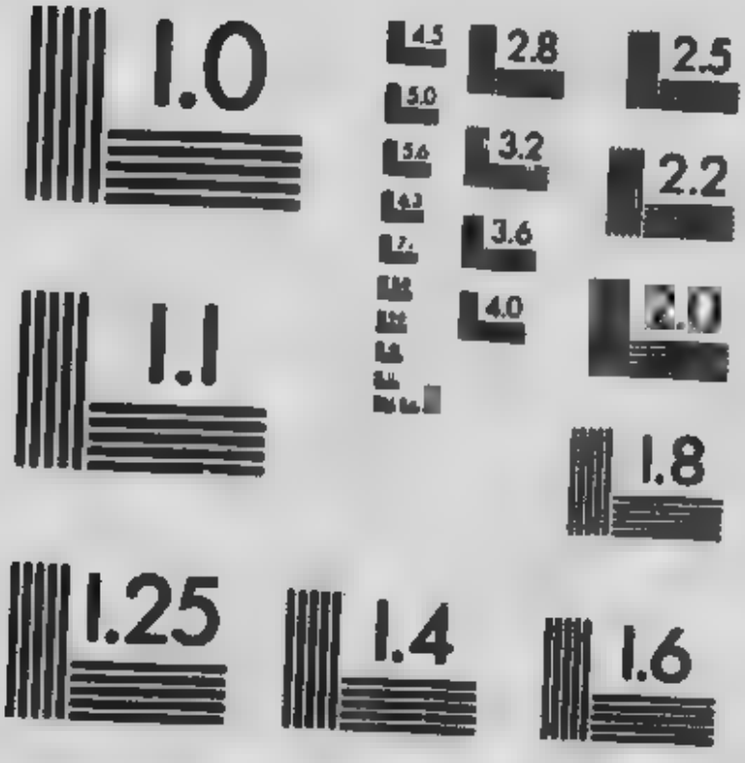
I put it as Mr. Pepper has shown it, that the skin has finally healed, showing a mark which is seven-eighths of an inch at the lower part, an inch and three-quarters higher up, and a quarter of an inch another inch and three-quarters higher up. Would that affect your judgment at all as to its being a scar or not?—I think that is against it being a scar.

Do you say that a mark of that kind could be caused by folding, that is to say, a mark which is wider at the bottom and narrows up?—Yes.



MICROCOPY RESOLUTION TEST CHART

(ANSI and ISO TEST CHART No. 2)



APPLIED IMAGE Inc

1653 East Main Street
Rochester, New York 14609 USA
(716) 482 - 0300 - Phone
(716) 288 - 5989 - Fax

Dr. Wall

Dr. Reginald Cecil Wall, examined by Mr. Tobin—I am a Master of Arts, a Doctor of Medicine of the University of Oxford, a Fellow of the Royal College of Physicians, London, and a member of the Royal College of Surgeons. I obtained the Fitzgerald Exhibition at Queen's College, Oxford. The examination for that is in classical subjects, and has nothing to do with medicine. I obtained the Andrew Clark Exhibition in medicine and pathology at the London Hospital. I am assistant physician to the London Hospital, and also to the hospital for consumptives at Brompton. Until the beginning of this year I was one of the pathologists to the London Hospital. I am an examiner in *materia medica* at the Apothecaries Hall. I am a Fellow of the Medical Society of London, and also of the Royal Society of Medicine. I am the author of various medical works. I was demonstrator of physiology for two years at the London Hospital College. I have seen the piece of skin and flesh which was before the last witness. I saw it first on 9th September, second on 15th October, and third on 17th October. I was present when Mr. Pepper made one transverse cut across the piece of skin, including the site of what he said was a scar. I was not present when Dr. Spilsbury made the subsequent cuts for the removal of pieces of skin for microscopical examination. On 15th October my examination of the piece of skin commenced at 11.30 and finished at 4.15. It was an examination with the eye and with a hand lens, not a microscopical examination. At the second examination on 17th October we saw the piece of skin for a third time to identify certain points that we wanted to confirm; and the remainder of the time we were present we were examining the microscopic sections which had been prepared by Dr. Spilsbury. The time spent over that examination was a little over two hours, mainly on the microscopical examination.

As the result of those examinations is that one groove—one limb of the so-called horse shoe—in your opinion a scar or not?—In my opinion it is not a scar. I could not see on inspection by the naked eye or with the hand lens such an appearance as I should have expected to find if there had been a scar in that situation. I found appearances which I could explain much more easily on the supposition that the skin had been folded in that region. Secondly, after the incision which had been made by Mr. Pepper very kindly, I did not, on examining the cut surfaces of the edges of the skin, find such an alteration in structure as I should have expected had there been originally a scar, and on comparing the cut surface at the site where the scar was alleged to be I did not find that the appearance of the cut surface differed from the appearance of the cut surface of the other part of the groove where it is admitted there is no scar.

By the Lord Chief Justice—Either right or left of the scar you did not find any differences?—At the site of where I understood the scar was supposed to be I found appearances which corresponded with the appearances in the opposite limb of the groove—the other limb of the groove. In the part which is supposed to be a scar the appearance seemed to me to resemble the cut edge of the part of the groove which was admitted not to be a scar.

Examination continued—I should have expected that if the two cut

surfaces were not of the same nature it would not have presented the same appearance.

What different appearance would you have expected from .. part which really came from a true scar?—That is a very difficult question to answer. The different new tissue may assume various appearances in different circumstances. All that I should have expected would be that it presented a different appearance—not the same appearance. On my examination with the naked eye I saw no structures which could not occur in a scar. On microscopical examination I observed traces of hair follicles, five in number, and a sebaceous gland—apparently one; that is, in the region called a scar. Outside the region called a scar there were other hairs and other sebaceous glands similar in appearance to those in the so-called scar.

You said that the appearance would be much more easily explained by the skin being folded. Would you mind having the tray before you and showing the jury what you mean by that?—What I meant by that was this—The first edge folds over like that (describing), and the second edge seemed naturally to fold over like that (describing). A member of the jury asks if it would be more marked in the upper part of the skin if it had been folded. I think the reason for that is that some substance, same fabric, was placed in here, besides the two sides of the fold.

By the Lord Chief Justice—There are no traces of the fabric in the outer roll. I imagine that the piece of skin had been folded up like that (describing)—roughly—and thrown into the grave.

Do you mean accidentally or deliberately?—Accidentally.

By a Juror—Could it have been kept in that position?—It could have been kept in that position if it had been held there by some substance lying on it.

By the Lord Chief Justice—If put into that position it would remain in that position until something came on top of it?—Something falling on the top of it might have rolled it back into that position.

Examination continued—I have not been in attendance daily at this particular part of the case.

By the Lord Chief Justice—You say that to produce what you have described it must have been rolled over twice, and you said, accidentally rolled over. Would it remain in the rolled-over position if it was put or thrown down without something being on the top of it?—No, I do not know that it would.

If rolled over twice, as has been described, that would keep it in that position until the super-incumbent weight comes upon it?—It might have been rolled over by something falling upon it.

Twice?—Well, if we throw a cloth into a basket it will roll over a good many times.

You think it could have been rolled over twice by something?—I think it is very easy to explain it in that way.

Examination continued—I have not been in attendance daily at this trial, as my time is valuable and I have important duties. A copy of the depositions given by the medical men at the Police Court was sent to me by the solicitor for the defence, Mr. Newton, and day by day during the

progress of this trial I have been supplied with a copy of the *Daily Mail* report of the evidence.

Cross-examined by Mr. MUIR—I have been dependent for the medical details given by those gentlemen who were called as expert witnesses in this case for the prosecution upon a newspaper report. I have had no other means of knowing what the reasons were that they gave for their opinions.

Were you a party to a report before any of those experts were cross-examined at the Police Court?—Yes. I did not hear any of the medical experts for the Crown give their evidence either at the Police Court or here. I have been present in Court to-day, and have heard Dr. Turnbull examined and cross-examined. He is the only medical witness in this case that I have heard examined or cross-examined. I agree with Dr. Turnbull practically entirely; there is no essential detail in which I disagree—I do not think there is any detail at all.

Did you read this passage in the copy of the depositions sent to you—"If Dr. Wall and Dr. Turnbull say that there is an entire absence of aponeouroses, I should say it is due to forgetfulness or defective observation"?—Yes, I did.

That was a question which professedly was put upon your report?—I believe it was.

Did you report that there was an entire absence of aponeuroses?—No. The report that Dr. Turnbull has just read was a joint report of ourselves. I reported that the aponeuroses so characteristic of the abdominal wall were not present.

That was a report of the absence of aponeuroses?—Of the characteristic aponeuroses.

Of the absence of aponeuroses such as you would find in the abdominal wall?—It was different from the entire absence of aponeuroses mentioned in the depositions. I did not say that the aponeuroses were entirely absent; I simply said in this report that we did not recognise the aponeuroses which we considered to be characteristic of the abdominal wall. The words of the report are—"The aponeuroses so characteristic of the abdominal wall were not present."

That refers to an entire absence of the aponeuroses of the abdominal wall. Is that not so?—I do not see why you put it in those words; it seems to me a very different statement.

By the LORD CHIEF JUSTICE—What is "entirely absent"?—The aponeuroses characteristic of the abdominal wall. I do not say aponeuroses, because there are aponeuroses in all sorts of parts of the body. Our sole point is that the aponeuroses characteristic of the abdominal wall were absent. I am quite willing to admit that we have modified that opinion since.

By Mr. MUIR—Nothing was said about my giving or not giving evidence when I signed that report. I was first asked to give evidence on Saturday last, I think. There was a further examination at the general request of Dr. Turnbull and myself after we had read the evidence of Mr. Spilsbury, Mr. Pepper, and Dr. Willcox. We made that request for a further examination on Tuesday or Wednesday of last week, two or three days

before we actually made the second examination, which was on the 15th. I was asked to give evidence after we had made the second examination, and before we had made the third. After our second examinati n we made a verbal report, saying that we were not so certain that the piece of skin did not come from the abdominal wall. My opinion now is, that it may have come from the abdominal wall, but there is not sufficient evidence to say definitely where it comes from. I think it probably does come from the abdominal wall.

By the Lord Chief Justice—The two parts of the body from which it might be derived, as we thought when we first saw the piece of skin, were the lower part of the abdomen and the upper part of the thigh on the inner side. We reported that in our opinion it probably did not come from the abdominal wall; that is the opinion we have modified.

With all your present lights, with what you now know about the aponeurosis, have you any doubt that it did come from the abdominal wall?—I have a doubt in so far as I am not absolutely certain.

Have you any doubt about it?—Yes, I have.

Where do you think it came from?—That is the trouble. If I could suggest where it came from——

It might be useful?—That is why I said I thought it *probably* came from the abdominal wall.

Dr. Alexander Wynter Blyth, examined by Mr. Tobin—I am a member of the Royal College of Physicians, a Fellow of the Institute of Chemistry, a Fellow of the Chemical Society, and I have various other qualifications. I am the author of a medical work entitled "Poisons: Their Effects and Detection."

Dr. Willcox told us yesterday that going through the ordinary processes he at last extracted a gummy substance. Now, is a gummy substance characteristic of hyoscin and not of hyoscyamin, atropine, or any animal alkaloid?—Certainly not. You can have a gummy substance in extracting various alkaloids. Often the slightest impurity, especially with regard to hyoscyamin, causes it not to crystallise. By the term "gummy substance" I presume is meant something that is not crystalline—a sticky substance.

It is said that atropine crystallises and hyoscyamin crystallises, but hyoscin does not. Do you agree with that or not?—I do; that would be in a pure state.

Now, as to applying Vitali's test—the reaction of violet fading into a brownish colour. Is that reaction characteristic of the vegetable mydriatic alkaloids, and also of the animal mydriatic alkaloids or not?—I know of my own knowledge that it is characteristic of the vegetable alkaloids; but with regard to the animal alkaloids, I have no experience of a mydriatic alkaloid obtained from animal tissues, and whether those alkaloids that do dilate the pupil, which have been found, give that test or not, I do not know. In fact, most of the work done in that direction was done before 1880, or about that time, when Vitali's test was published; therefore in 1869, for instance, it could not have been applied; so we do not know; no one knows.

Further, Dr. Willcox said that small round spheres were produced.

Dr. Blyth

Are those round spheres characteristic of hyoscin alone, or are they also found with hyoscyamin and atropine?—I have not been able to get them. I have attempted to get what Dr. Willcox has stated according to the depositions that have been forwarded to me, but I must confess that I have not been able to distinguish between the atropine, hyoscyamin, and hyoscin by hydrochloric acid, as Dr. Willcox has done. No one knows whether those round spheres might be produced at last in the case of animal alkaloids.

Dr. Willcox told us that in the lungs, which were most decomposed, he found only a trace of any alkaloid. If this was an animal alkaloid in fact, would you expect that he should have found most of the animal alkaloid in the most decomposed part, the lungs?—I should not have expected so, because animal alkaloids arise, it is well known, at a particular stage of putrefaction, and when that stage is passed any animal alkaloid that has been produced becomes more or less destroyed; so that in the same decomposing tissue at different times of its putrefaction you would never expect to find the same amount of putrefaction alkaloid.

If you get more putrefaction, is there the greater probability of finding an animal alkaloid?—There is not, because it has gone a stage beyond the time of production.

By the Lord Chief Justice—First of all, it is produced by putrefaction; then putrefaction goes on and the traces disappear.

Cross-examined by Mr. Muir—I have never tested a mydriatic animal alkaloid. I have read in Dr. Luff's evidence that he has himself found a mydriatic animal alkaloid in putrefied meat and has tested it, and that it did not give the purple colour on Vitali's test. I dare say he is quite correct. I do not dispute for a moment that there may be many mydriatic alkaloids.

The Lord Chief Justice—This gentleman has said that he had no experience of animal mydriatic alkaloids.

By Mr. Muir—You are speculating at large?—I do not know about speculating.

Do you know of any animal mydriatic alkaloid except mydalein?—That particular one was investigated, but there are others that have not been thoroughly investigated. I know of none by specific name except under the name of mydriatic alkaloids.

Is not that the only mydriatic animal alkaloid that you can give a name to?—One was separated in 1869 by Sonnenschein, and he gave it no name, but it seems not to have agreed with mydalein.

Can you give any name of any other animal mydriatic alkaloid but mydalein?—No, I cannot, because they are unnamed.

Have you any experience of them at all?—Not practically.

In your opinion, is it possible to make a mistake between animal mydriatic alkaloids and vegetable mydriatic alkaloids?—I think the evidence points that they are the same thing.

But is it possible to make a mistake between the two?—You would like me to answer yes or no, but that would not be fair. In my opinion, some of them are identical, and therefore it is possible to make a mistake between the two. Being referred to page 485 of my book "Poisons: Their

Dr. Blyth

Effects and Detection" (the last edition, 1895)—"Definition of a ptomaine. That is an animal alkaloid. A ptomaine may be considered as a basic chemical substance derived from the action of bacteria on nitrogenous substances. If this definition is accepted, a ptomaine is not necessarily formed in the dead animal tissue; it may be produced by the living, and in all cases it is the product of bacterial life. A ptomaine is not necessarily poisonous; many are known which are, in moderate doses, quite innocuous. When Selmi's researches were first published there was some anxiety lest the existence of ptomaines would seriously interfere with the detection of poison generally, because some were said to be like strychnine, others like colchicine, and so forth. Further research has conclusively shown that at present no ptomaine is known which so closely resembles a vegetable poison as to be likely in skilled hands to cause confusion." I do not think that that is absolutely correct. I have altered my opinion since I wrote that book. I have not had an opportunity yet of publishing that altered opinion. I altered my opinion during this month on reading up the various papers—foreign papers.

For the purposes of this case?—In connection with this case, of course, obviously.

For the purposes of this case you have altered your opinion?—I have, yes. I think there is strong evidence that there is in putrefying tissues a substance very much resembling the mydriatic alkaloids produced. I have read that Dr. Luff said, "I think it quite impossible to mistake animal for vegetable alkaloids if Vitali's test is applied." I disagree with that entirely, because some of the Italian chemists declare that they have got different reactions. I forget the names of those particular chemists; there is one Giotti. I have only seen extracts from their papers.

Dr. Willcox has said that he searched the original paper, and that statement is not to be found in it?—Well, I cannot help that. I have not searched for it; I have not had time. I cannot refer to any book which says that animal alkaloids will give the purple colour under Vitali's test.

[At this stage the Lord Chief Justice, the jury, Mr. Tobin, Mr. Pepper, Dr. Spilsbury, Dr. Turnbull, and Dr. Wall went into an adjoining Court for the purpose of an examination of the microscopic slides and the piece of skin and flesh.]

On the public trial being resumed—

Mr. Muir—My lord, I have an application to make to your lordship with regard to those pyjamas. No statement was made at all as to when the prisoner acquired them until after he went into the witness-box. It was impossible for us in examination-in-chief to deal with the question of the date on which he acquired them. I desire to call evidence upon that point.

The Lord Chief Justice—I shall allow you to call evidence as to the date of sale.

Mr. Muir—And the date of manufacture, in order to identify them.

The Lord Chief Justice—We will see about that; it may be fixed not before a certain date, but I should not allow you to call attention to the date of manufacture unless it bears directly on the question of sale.

Mr. Muir—It does, I think. Then, my lord, there is another point,

with regard to the dates upon which the "Montrose" has been in London since the defendant has been in this country, to show that he had opportunities of communicating with the quartermaster he has been speaking of.

The Lord Chief Justice—He has himself said that he knew the ship was here once. I think that is a little too remote.

Mr. Muir—If your lordship pleases.

Mr. Tobin—As to the first application of my learned friend, the information that they now have was, I presume, in their possession before this trial began, and if notice of it had been given to us we, the defendant's advisers, might have made inquiry into it.

The Lord Chief Justice—That is true, and I am quite sure that if it had been in their possession you would have had notice. In my judgment the point that is now raised as to the purchase of these pyjamas being made under circumstances which the prosecution say are impossible was not put to the witnesses for the Crown so as to direct your attention to it. I think the evidence is clearly admissible as to that part of it. I think it right to say, Mr. Tobin, because there is sometimes a misunderstanding about this, that the question of notice is never conclusive as to whether evidence is admissible. It is the practice of our law always to give the prisoner every notice that is possible, but in every case in which a point arises as to whether the evidence is material, it is for the judge to say whether or no it is admissible. It does not depend on notice being given. I am quite sure that, having regard to the practice of our law and the practice of the Director of Public Prosecutions, had this been foreseen, notice would have been given.

Mr. Tobin—I am obliged to your lordship. My point was rather this, that it ought not to be admitted at this stage when they could have given the evidence in chief.

The Lord Chief Justice—In my judgment the point made by Dr. Crippen with regard to this—I will not say all through his evidence, but in part of his evidence—was not developed either by the cross-examination or in anything put at the Police Court or here.

Mr. Tobin—It was not, because one did not know anything about it.

The Lord Chief Justice—Do not think I am blaming you, but it is Dr. Crippen's own evidence that makes this so material.

Further Evidence for the Prosecution.

William James Chilvers, examined by Mr. Muir—I live at 47 Guildford Park, Muswell Hill. I am buyer to Messrs. Jones Brothers, Holloway. I have seen the two pyjama suits and pair of trousers in this case. I recognise the material of which they are made. They were sold to my firm previous to December, 1908. I am afraid I cannot say how long before, but I should think it would be about a month or three weeks before December, 1908. They were sold by my firm between 28th December and during January, 1909. We keep sale duplicates. I have here the sale duplicate for 5th January, 1909. The goods mentioned in

that sale duplicate were delivered, but I am afraid I could not say whether they were sent by the cart or by special messenger. They were sent "Pay on delivery," and 17s. 9d. was paid to my firm in respect of that transaction on that day.

By the Lord Chief Justice—I am able to say that the 17s. 9d. applies to the pyjamas. There are other two items paid for at the time, to the same address, 39 Hilldrop Crescent, £2 5s. 4d. and 4s.

Examination continued—Now, will you look at the pair of trousers, which I will call the odd pair of trousers. Is the pattern of those trousers different from that of the other two sets?—The pattern is different.

Look at the pieces in the jar. Was what was in the jar sold by you as part of a pyjama suit?—Yes.

As part of what pyjama suit?—This (pointing) is the trousers, and this (pointing) is the coat.

The odd trousers were sold with some others, a jacket of which that is the material in the jar?—Yes.

It is a jacket from the same suit as the trousers?—Yes. I have seen the tab on the part which is in the jar; it bears the words "Jones Brothers, Holloway, Limited." Jones Brothers have been a limited company since 1906.

Mr. Tobin—No questions. I do not call any other evidence.

Closing Speech for the Defence.

Mr. Tobin addressed the jury on behalf of the prisoner. He said he did not propose to repeat at any length the arguments which he had used on the previous day. He adhered to every one of the arguments, and he was persuaded that the jury would not forget to consider every one of them when they came to reflect upon their verdict. He could not insist too much on the fact that in the administration of our criminal law the burden of proof rested on the prosecution, and if on a single material point there could be reasonable doubt it was not for him to appeal for mercy; he had only to claim what was the right of the prisoner. If there could be any real doubt, he asked them, having heard the evidence, and the many mysterious things in this case—when they called to mind the widely differing opinions of honest professional men on either side on points of surgery, on points of medicine, and on the properties of poisons—whether they were able to say with the satisfied judgment and safe consciences which the law required, that they were prepared to send a fellow man to his death. Was it safe? If it was not safe on any material point, then the law said that the man had a right to his acquittal. It was better far that guilty men should escape than that a single one should be convicted when there was a real, substantial doubt on any material point.

Mr. Tobin

He proposed to deal very briefly with the evidence. Dr. Crippen had himself given evidence, though there had been no obligation upon him to go into the witness-box. He had said that he had made no inquiries as to the whereabouts of his wife between 1st February, the date of her disappearance, and 31st July, the date of his arrest. Dr. Crippen had been living with Le Neve, his mistress, and he did not want to make inquiries. He and his wife had been unhappy at home, and she had left him because of their constant quarrels. It was idle to suppose that he would be other than relieved at her departure from Hilldrop Crescent. One would have supposed that he did not care, or that he would prefer her to be away. He did not want her, having his mistress there, and why then should he make inquiries about her? His conduct in not making inquiries was absolutely consistent with the case that he had presented, viz., relief at the departure of the wife and contentment at having his mistress at Hilldrop Crescent.

The next point was that Dr. Crippen had said in reply to Mr. Muir, "I know no one who has seen her alive since 1st February, and I know no one who has received a letter from her since that date." The law did not cast on Dr. Crippen the burden of finding out where his wife might be, whether she was alive or not, whether she was in some foreign country, or whether she had joined some man or not. Dr. Crippen had said that on 2nd February—and this was an important point—Le Neve had slept with him at Hilldrop Crescent. Was it conceivable that a few hours before Le Neve slept in that house Dr. Crippen could have taken his wife's life, buried the flesh and skin in a hole in the cellar floor, and done away with the head, the hands, feet, and bones? He had been at his work all day, and what time had he had in which to do all that? There had only been the night hours of 1st February to afford him the time and opportunity to mutilate the remains, bury the flesh in the cellar, and get rid of all the limbs and bones before Le Neve arrived. They could not imagine that on the night of 2nd February Le Neve could have been taken to sleep at that house if Dr. Crippen knew that there was a trace of his wife, when, if she saw any spot of blood or trace of the murder, she might have fled from the house in terror and gone straight to the police. It was inconceivable that he could have taken her there within a few hours of committing the murder, knowing the risk he ran if Le Neve should detect it.

In regard to the campaign of lies on which he had embarked, Dr. Crippen, in reply to Mr. Muir, had said that at the time he told those lies and wrote those false letters he did not know for certain whether his wife might not be writing to her friends and relations. Surely this explanation was simple if his tale was true. If she had gone away, and if she had appeared again, or had been writing to her friends, those friends would have been glad indeed to find that Dr. Crippen's story of her illness and her death was quite untrue, and further, they would have thought none the worse of Dr. Crippen for having told those lies in order to try and cover up his wife's disappearance and his wife's shame. There

[Photo. by Russell.

A. A. Tobin, K.C., leading Counsel for the Defence.

Mr. Tobin

was nothing, surely, in that point inconsistent with the ence set up by Dr. Crippen.

Dr. Crippen had been pressed that morning as to the reason for his flight, and pressed further, though he could hardly appreciate why, as to the reason why he had gone in disguise and under a false name. That, however, carried the case no further; it had been part of his scheme of flight. They had to consider what was the reason for his flight, or his folly, if they liked. A man had done the same thing before when he had heard of a charge in connection with the disappearance of his wife. They had to realise the time of his flight, and what had just been said by Inspector Dew. They had to remember the lies Dr. Crippen had told, and that he had admitted that they were lies. They must not forget what Inspector Dew had said to him, "I am not satisfied about your wife," and, "There will be serious trouble in store for you unless you find your wife." A man who had lost sight of his wife for all those months, who had no notion where she was, and who remembered that he had told lie after lie as to the reason for her disappearance, might be thoroughly alarmed when an officer of the law appeared and said there would be serious trouble in store for him about this disappearance. Dr. Crippen realised the mass of prejudice he had raised against himself by the lies he had told, and was flight, although an act of folly, a clear proof of guilt?

The next point in the cross-examination had been as to the story of the card on the "Montrose." "Is the quartermaster here?" Mr. Muir had asked. No, he was not. Mr. Muir was entitled to make all he could of that, but jury were bound to look on that point as men of the world. Was it likely that the quartermaster would be a very willing man to come at all or to confess to such a tale, when, if he did, the very act of his corroborating that story would go to show that he was a party to impeding the officers of the law?

The next point had been that Dr. Crippen had not given evidence before the magistrate or the coroner. He was then in the hands of his solicitor, Mr. Newton, under whose advice he acted. It was quite clear that the magistrate was bound on the evidence of the Crown witnesses to send the case for trial. It was a difficult, complicated case, requiring a good deal of research into matters connected with medicine, anatomy, and poison, apart from all the difficult questions of general fact outside of those technicalities. In his experience it would have been most unusual and most unwise had Mr. Newton put Dr. Crippen in the witness-box before the magistrate, knowing that whatever evidence he gave the magistrate would send the case for trial. It would have been a most unwise and most dangerous thing in a case of this kind. Further, it would have been absolutely idle for Dr. Crippen to have given evidence before the coroner when he had already been committed for trial by the magistrate before the inquest closed. That fully accounted for his not having gone into the box before.

He would make no more comments on Dr. Crippen's evidence, but would pass on to say that the jury must be satisfied beyond any reasonable

Mr. Tobin

doubt. Suspicion was not enough. It was not enough to say "I suspect strongly." They must be satisfied that the flesh was the flesh of a woman, and next, they must be satisfied beyond all reasonable doubt that it was the flesh of Belle Elmore. He reminded them that the law did not demand that a prisoner, before he was entitled to his acquittal, should show that the remains were those of a man or whose they were—least of all that he should prove to them where Belle Elmore was. The law presumed every man in the land to be innocent until the Crown had forged every single link in the chain against him. There was too much doubt on those points whether it was the flesh of a woman, and, if so, whether it was the flesh of Belle Elmore; there was too much doubt for them to find the verdict to which the law attached the penalty of death. They would pause before they made up their minds on those two points.

Strange things were recorded in our legal history where a man had been convicted of murder, where he had been hanged, and where, afterwards, the supposed victim had appeared alive again. These things were recorded as having happened in spite of all of the fair and able administrators of justice, and they must be careful that such a thing should not happen again. That the jury would approach their verdict with the fairest minds and the closest recollection of all he had urged he knew perfectly well. This was a case which they would all remember to their dying day, and if in the course of time—not for the first time in history—Belle Elmore should in very truth appear again, what then? This was the first time that any one in the land had heard both sides of the case. It was the first time it had been argued on his side at all, and theirs was the duty to say whether they ought not in justice to surmount those mountains of prejudice, which, by his lies and by his flight, Crippen had reared against himself. It was for them now to say whether they could pierce the veil of suspicion which his folly in so lying and the folly of his flight had created against him. His disappearance, his lies, his flight were no proof whatever that he committed murder. There were some things needed in this case. There was the question of motive. Murders had sometimes, he supposed, been committed without any motive, or, at any rate, people had been convicted where no motive had been proved, but in all cases of murder, where there was such a grave conflict as there was here, one looked to see whether or not there was any adequate motive for such a crime. There was the money motive—wholly insufficient. The prisoner could not touch the money until some eleven months after his wife had disappeared. The motive that he (counsel) suggested himself was that he might have wanted to marry Le Neve, but that had gone by the board because he never married her. There was another thing which was admittedly needed, and that was a dexterous hand, well versed in anatomical operations. So far from being dexterous in anatomy, he was, compared with the skill required by an anatomical surgeon, a very commonplace manager for Munyons' remedies. Something else was needed. There was needed the fiend incarnate to do a deed like that; but the prisoner's reputation was that of a kind-hearted, good-hearted, amiable man. Were they to be told that during the doctor's

close intimacy with his friends in London, and with his business people in London, they would never have detected any trait such as cruelty or something of that kind in his nature? The characteristics of the man who would do a deed like this were absolutely absent.

They must have proof positive that those remains had been buried since half-past one on the morning of 1st February of this year. In a case of life and death could they say that they were satisfied beyond all doubt that that flesh and those remains in the cellar were buried there since that time? He reminded them that Dr. Marshall had said that some bodies remained in an excellent state of preservation for some years if buried in lime and in soil of a light clay, which practically excluded all air. Those were the conditions obtaining in that case. Those remains, whosesoever they were and whoever had buried them, had been buried in clay which practically excluded all air, and there was lime in the hole as well. Dr. Marshall had said that he had known bodies buried under such conditions remain in an excellent state of preservation for some years. Were they then able to say upon their oaths and in their consciences, and to say safely, that they were satisfied beyond all reasonable doubt that the remains were buried some five and a half months only before they were discovered by Inspector Dew?

There was another thing lacking in that case, and that was a positive proof that the remains were those of a woman at all. Witnesses for the Crown frankly admitted that the only way to tell with certainty whether the remains were those of a man or a woman was on anatomical grounds. Mr. Pepper agreed, however, that these grounds were wholly wanting in that case. Even if they were able to say with a clear conscience that they were convinced, in spite of the absence of anatomical grounds, that the remains were those of a woman, they had to go a step further and to be persuaded in their own minds that the remains were those of Belle Elmore. Mrs. Martinetti, a witness for the Crown, had said that she saw on Mrs. Crippen's body the navel just above that scar, but on the piece of flesh before them there was no navel above the scar in the way described by Mrs. Martinetti. That consideration alone must make them pause, and pause long, ere they could give a verdict against the prisoner at the bar. In view of the evidence given by doctors of high position on either side, could they as laymen say with certainty that they were persuaded beyond all reasonable doubt that that mark was the scar of an operation? The Crown admitted that the mark on one side was caused by a folding. Could not the other mark have been caused in the same way? The conflict went much further, because Dr. Turnbull, an expert in the use of the microscope, had told them that he could detect structures which could not have been there if that were in truth a scar. When men of high position and unimpeached honesty disagreed upon a point like that, how could they in a matter of life and death say whether they were certain that there were sebaceous glands and hair follicles there?

The question of poison had also to be proved beyond the shadow of a doubt. It was unfortunate that before Dr. Willcox tested for hyoscin, and before he formed the opinion that he had found hyoscin, he had heard that Dr. Crippen had bought hyoscin on 19th January of this year. He did not say more than that. The point was whether the

Mr. Tobin

gummy substance which Dr. Willcox found was a vegetable alkaloid obtained from a plant or an animal alkaloid produced by the natural process of putrefaction. Had they reached the limits of their scientific knowledge so that they were able in a matter of life and death to say that that substance might not have been the result of some animal alkaloid produced after death by a natural process of putrefaction? Were they sure that scientific men had got to the bottom of things, or did they not think that as the years rolled on they would acquire new knowledge? Only eight years ago it was thought that the chemical formulæ of those three alkaloids—atropine, hyoscyamin, and hyoscin—were identical. It was now proved that they were not, and who knew whither the researches of their great scientists might not lead on that point? Were they satisfied beyond all doubt that science had reached the limit?

Leaving these technicalities, there was one factor in the case that dominated the whole, and that was the fact that Crippen went daily to work, constantly saw his friends, took Le Neve at once, the very day after the disappearance of his wife, to live in this house, and yet none of his friends, business or social, saw any strange look in the man, any sign of fright or agitation. Was it conceivable that if during the night of 31st January he had been engaged in that gruesome task of cutting up the body, severing the limbs, burying the remains, carrying parts away piecemeal from the house and getting rid of stains of blood—was it conceivable that he could have done all that in a short time? Was it conceivable that if a murderer had done these things he would have gone next morning to his work without a trace of terror or a strange look in his eyes? It was beyond the powers of belief; and that element in the case the jury would not allow themselves, he knew, for one moment to overlook when they were trying to solve all the doubtful matters in this case.

Gentlemen, the materials are before you now. My lord holds the scales of justice even. It is for you to say which way those scales shall come down. My only anxiety is this—lest I, by any want of vigilance or care in this case, by any omission on my part, have done anything that might imperil this man's life. But this I do want to say. I want to acknowledge, and I should be ungenerous if I did not, the loyal help given to me and the wise suggestions made to me not only in Court, but for long hours out of Court, by my two colleagues with me in this case, Mr. Huntly Jenkins and Mr. Roome, and all those who collected the material to enable me to present the case for the prisoner. I do not plead for mercy. Not at all. I do not plead for mercy. There is only one anxiety which oppresses me, and that anxiety is that you should have the will power, because you need it—that is no slight on you, gentlemen—you need all the will power a man could have to enable you to expel the poison or prejudice which must have been instilled into your minds by reason of his lies, by reason of his folly, and beyond that by reason of so much that has appeared in the columns of the papers. You need the will power to expel all that prejudice. All I plead for is that you should give, as you mean to give, the verdict with minds unclouded by any preconceived prejudices. What I do demand, and what I have a

right to demand, is that you should never forget that greatest principle of all in English justice—that great principle of the benefit of the doubt. That is not a principle to be ignored, you know. That is a principle to be jealously guarded and to be sacredly preserved by every juror, whatever the case may be. Each of you, let me remind you, is separately responsible for the verdict which you jointly give. Each of you individually. Not one of you must yield his opinion to that of the others unless his reason and his conscience dictate to him that he should so yield. Not one of you can shelve his responsibility. Each of you is responsible for his verdict to his conscience and his God.

The Lord Chief Justice—I find that that text-book of Hempel & Arndt's is obtainable, Mr. Tobin. I have directed it to be sent for, and it shall be placed at your disposal to-morrow morning.

The Court adjourned.

Fifth Day—Saturday, 22nd October, 1910.

The Lord Chief Justice—Mr. Muir, I have received an enormous number of communications, some of which are entitled, I think, to some respect. One has reference to an answer to a question put by one of the jury yesterday, and I think it is fair to put Dr. Crippen in the box again, and ask him another question about it. First of all, I should like to know if Hempel & Arndt's book is forthcoming?

Mr. Muir—My lord, it is not. An officer was engaged up to eight o'clock last night trying to get it, without success.

Hawley Harvey Crippen (recalled), examined by the Lord Chief Justice—I did not mention Hempel & Arndt's book to my advisers; I never mentioned that book until here in Court yesterday. When I said in my evidence in chief that I had known hyoscin administered at the Bethlem Lunatic Asylum, I meant the Bethlem Royal Hospital, where I studied for three months. In the Royal Bethlem Hospital and in my own practice, in cases of insanity in which hyoscin is administered it is always given by hypodermic injection. It may be given in cases of nervous debility in infinitesimal doses by the mouth. I treated most of my patients by correspondence; I seldom saw a patient. My principal practice was with the eye, throat, nose, and ear, but I also had nervous cases. I have never had any cases of paralysis agitans. I have had cases of locomotor ataxy. I had a case of violent mania a long time ago in America. I had a case of locomotor ataxy in January of this year. With regard to the Mr. MacSweeny, whom I mentioned yesterday, I never saw him.

He says in his letter that he has received your "Home Remedy

Book." Did you publish a "Home Remedy Book"?—He refers to Munyons'.

Did you know what he was suffering from?—Yes, he was suffering from nervous debility. His letters are not all there.

Do you know one way or the other of your own practice whether in the cases of the diseases I have mentioned—paralysis agitans, locomotor ataxy, violent mania, cerebral excitement, or epilepsy—hyoscin is prescribed?—In cases where there is cerebral excitement it is administered by hypodermic injection, but in the class of cases that I dealt with, that is nervous debility or nervous irritation, it is given in very minute doses, infinitesimal doses, for relieving the irritable condition of the nerves.

And then hypodermically?—No, by the mouth.

The Lord Chief Justice (to the jury)—I think, gentlemen, that this rather shows that this question of hypodermically or by the mouth does not become so important after all.

(The prisoner then returned to the dock.)

Mr. Tobin—I do not know whether your lordship will think it proper to look at a book I have here, which has only this moment been handed to me.

The Lord Chief Justice—Certainly, I will look at it. (A book handed to his lordship.) This is not the book mentioned by the prisoner yesterday?

Mr. Tobin—No, my lord.

The Lord Chief Justice (after reading the book)—This book certainly does seem to show that in some cases of hydrophobia with maniacal excitement, acute pneumonia with wild delirium, cardiac disease with wandering delirium, and attempts to get out of bed, chronic Bright's disease with refusal to take food, and acute double pneumonia with delirium 100th of a grain of hyoscin is given subcutaneously—that is hypodermically. On another page it is said that the preparation of hyoscin—which, I presume, is the same—may be given subcutaneously or by the mouth. The writer says that his own experience is decidedly in favour of administration under the skin, which, besides being more practicable, and perhaps the only method with delirious patients, is the more effective. This seems to establish that these minute doses of hyoscin are known to medical men to be given in these diseases either by the mouth or under the skin. You can look at the book, Mr. Muir. It is a minor incident in the case, although it has been referred to by Mr. Tobin quite rightly. It only shows that the particular question that was asked by the jury was answered too positively by Dr. Willcox.

Mr. Muir—Dr. Willcox was only talking of his experience.

The Lord Chief Justice—It is quite plain, but it is a very minor point. Will you give me the title of the book?

Mr. Tobin—It is Braithwaite's "Retrospect of Medicine." The article I referred your lordship to is written by Dr. Mitchell Bruce, consulting physician to the Charing Cross Hospital.

Closing Speech for the Crown.

Mr. Muir addressed the jury for the Crown. He said that he should not have thought it necessary for any one who had observed the demeanour of the jury during the progress of the trial to address to them any words seeking to enforce upon their minds the gravity of the task which they had undertaken; but his learned friend had thought it right to drag out of the limbo in which it had rested for many years an old forensic bogey in order to suggest to their minds that they ought to be cautious and certain before, in a case involving life and death, they found a verdict of "guilty." There were cases in the books, said his learned friend, which showed that men had been tried for murder, convicted, and hanged, and then their supposed victims had turned up alive. There were such cases in books. Sir Matthew Hale, who died in 1676, mentioned two such cases, which were old cases in his time. The world had contracted since then for the purpose of finding absent persons. Steamships, railway trains, electric telegraphs, and newspapers had made a vast difference to the administration of justice since Sir Matthew Hale's time. But it was thought necessary to flutter before their eyes that ancient bogey, as if they were not grown men, and as if they would be afraid to go home in the dark because, according to their consciences, they had done their duty. No caution was necessary for the jury to be as careful as men could be, and as certain as in the affairs of this life they could be; and he should have thought an attempt to frighten them, as if they were little children in the nursery, was out of place. They would do their duty according to the ancient custom of the law of this country, which resolved all doubtful questions in favour of the prisoner upon his trial. If doubt there were, he was entitled to be acquitted. There was not any question of benefit at all; the law was that the Crown must prove it beyond doubt. If they did not prove it beyond doubt, they had failed to prove the case at all. That was the l 'hat they were called upon to administer; and who was going to sugges t they were going to find a verdict of "guilty" in this case if, in their . nsciences and minds, they thought the evidence was not sufficient?

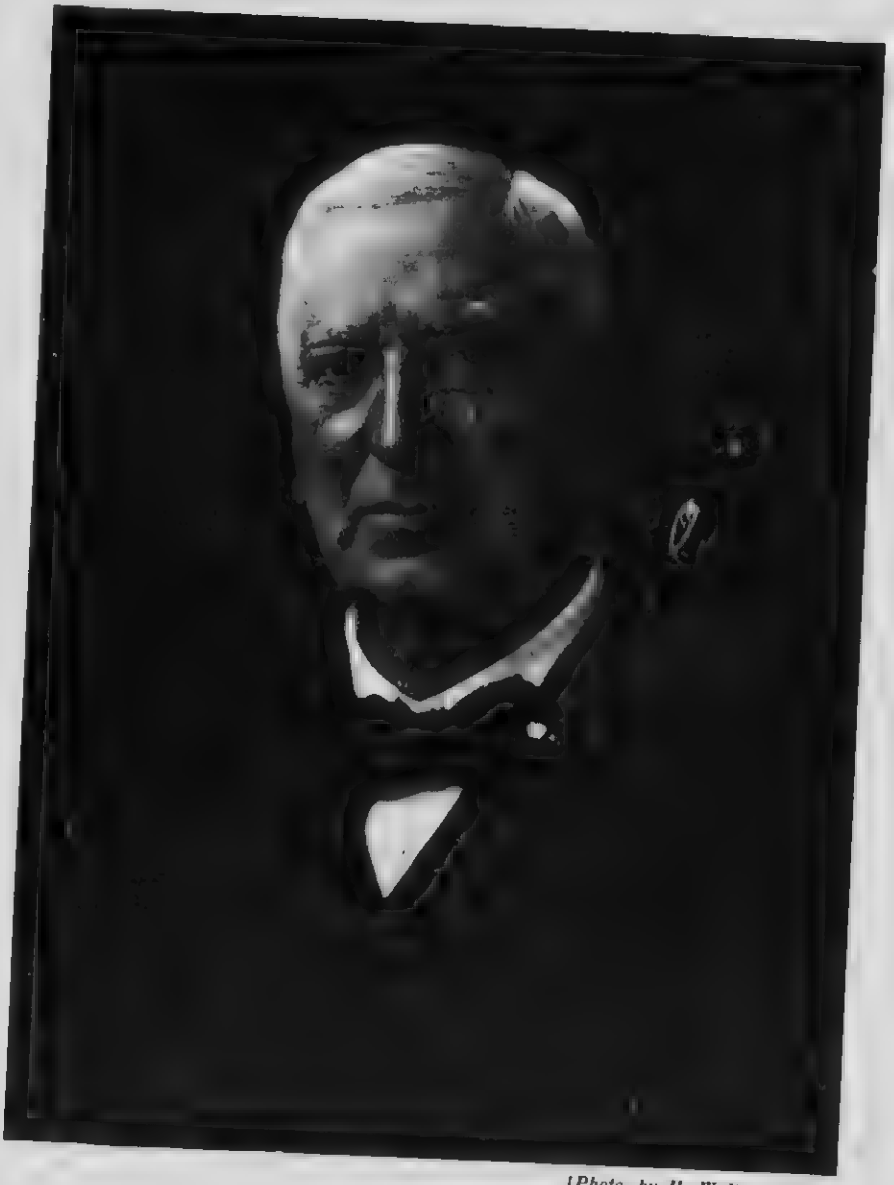
One other topic his learned friend dwelt upon, which neither in opening the case nor now did he deem worth wasting their time to say a word upon. The suggestion that their minds would be prejudiced by anything they had heard outside the jury box was a suggestion he would not insult their intelligence by making; and he only mentioned it now because his learned friend said that the newspapers, in publishing reports of this case, had published one side only. Why had they published one side only? Because the prisoner chose to keep his mouth closed; because he did not choose to go before the coroner; because he did not choose to go into the witness-box before the magistrate; because he chose to reserve those precious medical witnesses until this trial—those witnesses who, if they had gone into the witness-box at the Police Court, would have sworn something totally different from what they swore in the witness-box here. That being the

Mr. Muir

fact, his learned friend had thought it right to complain, on behalf of the prisoner, that the newspapers had only published one side of the case.

They were asked throughout the cross-examination of witness after witness, throughout the two speeches of his learned friend, to discount or to discard plain facts, because the prisoner was too kind-hearted a man to have done the deed of which he stood accused. Let them examine the foundation for that theory. The prisoner had admitted that over a long series of months he led a life of studied hypocrisy, utterly regardless of the pain which the lies which he was telling and was acting would inflict upon friend or sister of his wife. Letters full of grief of a bereaved husband were written to Mrs. Martinetti, to Dr. Burroughs to be seen by Dr. Burroughs's wife, to Mrs. Mills, the half-sister of Cora Crippen. There was that letter of his carrying the sobs of the bereaved husband across the ocean to harrow the feelings of his wife's relations. He put on mourning, wrote on black-edged paper, mocked the grief of his wife's dearest friends, who thought they were sympathising with him, when they wished to lay a last tribute of love upon the far-off grave of their dead friend. He said, "A wreath is no use; she is not being buried, she is being cremated; her ashes will soon be here"—and then with his tongue in his cheek—"you may have your little ceremony then." Ashes to be fetched across the sea! They were asked to say then that he was too kind-hearted to have done this deed. The man who could mock the mourners had not sufficient control over his nerve, if he had done this thing, to conceal the fact that he had done it, in office hours? Let the jury act on the plain facts; let them deal with the man as they saw him in the evidence of Mrs. Martinetti and in that of Mrs. Smythson, in the letter he wrote to Mrs. Mills. If they were going to acquit him, would it be upon the ground that he was too kind-hearted? For days sitting in that dock they had had opportunities of judging what manner of man he was; for hours standing in that witness-box, they were the judges of whether the prisoner had the nerve to conceal his feelings. What were they to say of all that hypocrisy and of all those lies? They were told to cover up a scandal. For whose sake? For the sake of the wife who had betrayed him, who put on a fair face to the world and made her most intimate friends believe she was a bright, happy-natured woman, but to him indifferent, bad-tempered, extravagant, a person having no affection towards him at all. A living lie he would have them believe his wife was; deserted him for another man; and it was to cover up the scandal attaching to her name when she deserted him without cause that he told all those lies and acted all that hypocrisy. He believed she was unfaithful to him; that her love was fixed on Bruce Miller; she living in the same house with this man, Bruce Miller, in America. They had never cast eyes on each other for six years; but she was the unfaithful, bad-tempered wife, and he the kind-hearted, considerate husband! They had seen Bruce Miller. It was an odd jury of twelve men that, whatever topic was being discussed before them, did not contain one or more who thoroughly understood it. There was a freedom of manner between actors and actresses on the music hall stage which did not exist in their conventional life. It was suggested that she had been unfaithful with Bruce Miller. Bruce Miller had travelled across the ocean to contradict it. If he was a liar he would not have

n behalf of
of the case.
itness after
discount or
rted a man
xamine the
over a long
dless of the
inflict upon
sband were
Burroughs's
that letter
ocean to
, wrote on
ends, who
lay a last
said, "A
her ashes
you may
ea! They
this deed.
l over his
l done it,
l with the
at of Mrs.
going to
-hearted!
ging what
hey were
feelings.
s! They
the wife
made her
man, but
affection
vife was;
attaching
hose lies
im; that
with this
ch other
l he the
It was
l before
There
sic hall
ted that
ravelled
ot have



[Photo. by H. Walter Barnett.

R. D. Muir, Leading Counsel for the Crown.

admitted what he did admit—the sending of the letters "with love and kisses to Brown Eyes." That would have meant so much if a letter had been sent to a wife in their class of life; and it might mean so little between persons on the music hall stage. Was it likely that he would have admitted that—admitted the kisses—if he was a liar? And the man who brought those accusations against his wife was the man who was himself carrying on an intrigue with Ethel Le Neve, extending over three years, and who said in the witness-box that he believed his wife knew nothing about it.

It was said that there was no adequate motive shown for the murder. When was an adequate motive shown for any murder? His learned friend had put upon the case for the Crown, which he represented, the suggestion that the only motives put forward by them were the motive to get the £600 in the bank and the motive to marry Ethel Le Neve. Neither of those motives was suggested by him in his opening as the immediate cause of the murder. The motive that was suggested was the establishment of closer relations with Ethel Le Neve; to substitute for those clandestine meetings in the daytime a permanent cohabitation of the two. What did he care whether he married Ethel Le Neve? What was the necessity of it? The man who within a fortnight of the announcement of his wife's death pretended to his partner that he had married another woman was no stickler for ceremony. But was the motive the establishment of closer relations with Ethel Le Neve? On 1st February, according to him, his wife was alive and well between two and three in the morning. According to him, on the night of 2nd February he took Ethel Le Neve to sleep at 39 Hilldrop Crescent. That was his story. The date did not agree with Mrs. Jackson's; but let that pass. No motive? Love—if they dignified it by that name; lust—if they gave it its true appellation—one of the most powerful motives actuating the thoughts of men. Money to gratify that lust. Immediately on 2nd February the wife's jewels were pawned, £80 was raised; and it was suggested that there was no motive! A man who did that was a man absolutely callous to the feelings of others, as he suggested he had proved by his own admissions and by his conduct to his wife's friends. There was no sign of alarm—it was suggested by his learned friend, and he made the best suggestions that were possible on the facts—or of agitation. It was true he showed none. Some men had marvellous control over their inner feelings. Some men could look almost happy, certainly at their ease, in circumstances which would absolutely break down the average man; and they had had opportunities of judging to which of those two classes the prisoner belonged. There was no sign of alarm; he was going about his business in the ordinary way, with a smiling face, a calm manner, the index, it was suggested, of a clear conscience. He had nothing to fear, because he had done nothing wrong; therefore a calm, ordinary demeanour. Had he something to fear when Inspector Dew arrested him on the river St. Lawrence? Had he something to fear when he travelled across the Atlantic with the inspector? He was calm and cheerful from the day of his arrest till yesterday. But it was said that because he appeared to be calm and cheerful he could not have done this.

It was beyond the limits of human belief, it was said, that, if the prisoner murdered his wife on 1st February, as was suggested, before he

left for business on that day—if he went to business on that day—he could have invited Ethel Le Neve to sleep with him at Hilldrop Crescent on the 2nd. In the first place, the statement that Ethel Le Neve slept the night of 2nd February at Hilldrop Crescent rested entirely upon the prisoner's word. He never said so before yesterday in cross-examination in the witness-box. His recollection was that his learned friend Mr. Tobin did not open that as a fact, though he saw the power of it as an argument when he came to sum up the case. It rested on the uncorroborated statement of Crippen in the witness-box. It was for the jury to say what weight, if any, they attached to any statement of Crippen's uncorroborated. But, if it was true, there was plenty of time from the morning of 1st February to the night of 2nd February to have got rid of the remains of his wife. Mrs. Jackson said that it was in the month of February that Ethel Le Neve first stayed away from her lodgings one night. The effect of her evidence, though she spoke of no date, was that it was later in the month of February than the 2nd.

He came to matters which were still more important—the question of the identity of those remains. It was said by his learned friend that the Crown must establish two things—first, that the remains were those of a woman; and, secondly, that they were the remains of Belle Elmore. With respect to his learned friend, there was some confusion of thought there. The one was a step in the proof of the other. The Crown must prove to the satisfaction of the jury that those were the remains of Belle Elmore, or it must fail. But that did not mean, as his learned friend had suggested to the jury, that they must be satisfied that somebody looking at those remains was able to say, "I recognise them with my eyesight as the remains of Belle Elmore." If that were a necessity of either fact or law, many of the worst crimes would go unpunished. They could conceive a case in which a man reduced the remains of his victim to a few charred bones which no human being could recognise, and still conceive that the evidence might be overwhelming that the bones were those of the missing victim. And so here the facts which went to establish that those human remains were the remains of Belle Elmore were the whole facts of the case, from the fact of the date of 1st February at half-past one in the morning, when the prisoner and she were left alone in their house, through all the months down to 13th July, when those human remains were found buried in the prisoner's cellar mixed up with the prisoner's pyjama jacket.

Those were the facts upon which the Crown asked the jury, exercising all the caution which it was their duty to exercise, to say that the facts proved beyond all reasonable doubt, and that those remains were the remains of Belle Elmore. There were two ways of approaching the question of identity. "Find something which shows me that the remains here are the remains of Belle Elmore," that was one way. The other way was, "See if there is not something in those remains which shows that they are not the remains of Belle Elmore." His learned friend, who needed to be under no misgivings that any lack of vigilance or skill on his part had deprived his client of any assistance that legal aid could give him, did not point to any single item in all the items in that grave for the purpose of saying, "There is a thing which shows that those remains cannot be the

remains of Belle Elmore." Not one! A man's handkerchief, and a man put them there. A man's pyjama jacket; yes, and the prisoner's pyjama jacket. Take away those items suggestive of a man. No question was put to any medical man for the Crown or for the defence, "Do you find upon those remains any indication at all of the male sex?" Therefore the only things and in that grave suggestive of a man were suggestive of the man who put the remains into it.

He desired to say again that no medical man could say with certainty on anatomical grounds that those remains were the remains of a woman. Anatomical grounds were the only grounds on which as medical men they would be justified in forming any opinion at all. There was failure of affirmative proof on that point, but what followed? Hinde's curlers with a woman's hair mixed up with those remains. How did they get there unless they came from a body from which those remains were all that were left? The colour of the hair was dark brown naturally, bleached to a lighter colour. Belle Elmore had dark brown hair bleached to a lighter shade. It was true that other women had dark brown hair bleached to a lighter colour, but there was no suggestion that any woman with hair of that sort was missing in London within the limits of the time which were involved in that case. There was the undergarment such as Belle Elmore wore. Mrs. Harrison, one of her oldest friends in this country, who had known her for twelve or thirteen years, and had often seen her dressing, spoke of the hair as being like the hair of Belle Elmore, as she saw it in the morning before Belle Elmore dressed. Mrs Harrison spoke of the undergarments as being such as Belle Elmore wore, and asked in cross-examination, "And such as thousands of other women wore?" she answered, "Yes, but Belle always wore them." The flesh which had been produced before them—he observed how bravely they did their duty in regard to that ghastly relic—that piece of flesh, perhaps the most important, certainly one of the most important things, was it a piece of the body of Belle Elmore? It was said by the witnesses for the Crown to be a piece of the lower abdominal wall, and bearing an old scar; and Belle Elmore had been operated upon in that region in the year 1892 or 1893.

It was disputed by his learned friend in opening that this was part of the abdominal wall at all, and he suggested to the jury that his medical evidence would leave their minds in such doubt on the point that they would be bound to acquit his client. The evidence upon this branch of the case could be summarised in a few sentences. Mr. Pepper, a surgeon of the greatest experience, who had himself performed hundreds of operations, had seen a healed scar caused by his own operation which was just such a scar as this. Dr. Willcox, a surgeon of great experience, and Dr. Marshall, the police surgeon, all saw the thing when it was fresh; both agreed that it was a scar. On the other hand, there was the evidence of Dr. Turnbull and Dr. Wall, who at first said that the piece of flesh did not come from the abdominal wall at all, but from the buttocks, and who now had been obliged to admit in the witness-box that they were absolutely mistaken. Those were the two men who did not scruple to

give a report, after a twenty minutes' examination of a piece of the human body, to the effect that three distinguished colleagues had been talking nonsense in the witness-box on oath. Now, they had recantations in the witness-box, recantations and confessions of incapacity or the grossest carelessness and rashness. And those two men who had so recanted and so confessed were the two men on whose evidence the jury were asked to say that Mr. Pepper, with his vast experience, and Dr. Willcox, acting for the Home Office, who had probably conducted more inquiries than any other living man except perhaps Dr. Luff, were absolutely mistaken. All Dr. Turnbull could do in answer to him was to say that a person unaccustomed to the use of the microscope might make a mistake. Did he mean to suggest in that innuendo that Dr. Spilsbury was unaccustomed to the use of the microscope? Was that the suggestion? He hoped not.

The mistakes Dr. Turnbull made were these. He was wrong as to the part of the body from which this flesh came. He was wrong as to its not having the characteristic aponeurosis upon the abdominal wall. He was wrong as to the absence of the tendon. And he was wrong as to the absence of the transverse muscles. All those mistakes he had to confess in the witness-box. It was for the jury to judge between the evidence for the Crown and for the defence which they considered most worthy of belief. And as to Dr. Wall, he never heard anything more extraordinary in his life. Being asked his reasons for thinking it was not a scar he said, "If it were a scar I should expect to find something different from what I did find." Nothing more than that to put against the reasoned evidence of Mr. Pepper, Dr. Willcox, and Dr. Spilsbury. Was that a piece of the lower abdominal wall of a human being? The answer, he submitted, must be yes. Had it got a scar on it? Was it part of the body of a woman? The evidence of Mr. Pepper was emphatic. Then if a woman, if a scar, if from the lower part of the abdomen, from whose body did it come? His submission was that there was only one answer possible. It came from the body of a woman who was seen alive in the house at half-past one in the morning of 1st February, whose remains were dug up from the cellar on 13th July, and who between those two dates was never seen alive or heard from.

The suggestion of his learned friend in opening the case was—why should the prisoner, during his four and a half years' tenancy, have suspected there were remains there at all when Inspector Dew, digging with the heel of his boot, could not tell that the floor had been disturbed for years and years? But they now knew that within a much shorter period than that those remains were buried. They were buried with the pyjama jacket, having upon it the name of Jones Brothers, Holloway, Limited, a company which was not formed until 1906, after Crippen became tenant of the house. The jacket was bought by Jones Brothers in November or December, 1908, sold by them between December and January, 1908-9, and money collected for it from the address, 39 Hilldrop Crescent. Who in that period could have buried it in that house? Who was missing who could be buried in it? Nobody but Belle Elmore.

It was said the prisoner had not the opportunity or the skill necessary

Closing Speech for the Crown.

for the burial and the mutilation of those remains. On that point counsel referred to the evidence of the diploma, signed by the professor of anatomy or surgery of the prisoner's medical school in the United States, the prisoner's own statement that before he took his degree he attended hospitals in London for the purpose of witnessing operations, and the endorsement upon his diploma showing that he practised in America in different States under the authority of that diploma, together with the statement of Mr. Pepper, that once having learned how this thing was done it would not matter whether one had practised it for ten years or whether he had not. This was no delicate dissection which required constant skill and practice in order to do it with accuracy; but it did require some medical knowledge and some degree of dexterity such as would be gained in going through the medical school. On the other hand they had the evidence of the prisoner and nothing else. Somebody in Crippen's house, while Crippen was tenant, carved up the body which he suggested was proved to be the body of Cora Crippen. Who could do this thing in Crippen's house since November, 1908, but the man who was now upon his trial?

What became of Belle Elmore? Did she ever leave that house alive after the Martinettis left at half-past one in the morning of 1st February? No one ever saw her alive, ever had a letter from her. Her property was left behind; she had no money, so far as could be found. Before the flight it was said, quite truly upon the prisoner's own version of the matter, why should he inquire where she was gone? There was something to be said for the proposition, why should he inquire after his arrest? The most obvious inquiries neglected—the tradesmen who would come to the door, the neighbours who would see her, or the cabman who would take her luggage. Here was a man defended by a London solicitor whose defence was that his wife was alive, and, as far as the defendant knew, not a tradesman, cabman, or steamship owner questioned to find what had become of her. Was that fact explicable upon any hypothesis except one, that Crippen knew her remains were buried in that cellar, and that any inquiries for her would be absolutely fruitless and futile? She had friends at home in England, friends in America, relatives in America. Any inquiry made at them? None, either before or after the flight. But the friends were persistent. "What has become of your wife?" they asked. "Where is she?" He told them lies, and they found them to be lies. They wanted to know the spot she died, the place where she was cremated. They were not friends to desert a woman whom they loved, and she was not the woman, whatever her quarrels with her husband might have been, to cut herself adrift from her friends in that way. The newspapers of two continents were ringing with this case. The police had circulated descriptions.

It was suggested at this moment that Belle Elmore might be alive, that murders had been committed, or supposed to be committed, and persons wrongly convicted and hanged, and the supposed victims had reappeared. Was it not asking them to behave like children in a nursery listening to fairy tales to expect men to act on such a suggestion as that? The jury were grown men, business men. If ever a fact was proved

Mr. Muir

beyond reasonable doubt to business men, courageously applying their minds to a difficult and a painful task, was not the fact proved that Belle Elmore was dead, and that the prisoner knew it?

How did she die? She died of hyoscin poisoning, and the poison hyoscin was found in the remains of Belle Elmore. How did it get there? Crippen bought hyoscin on 19th January—five grains of it. He had never bought it before or since. Two and a third grains he said he dispensed in medicine used in extremely rare and difficult cases—not the kind of cases ordinarily dealt with through the post—but not a patient called who ever got a pilule with hyoscin in it. A grain and two-thirds was left in his possession. Where was it? Measures, test tubes, and paraphernalia of that kind had been produced, but no hyoscin. He said it was there in a cupboard in his office when he went away. What had become of it? More than half a grain found in the dead body!

He could not help regretting that his learned friend allowed himself to say that it was unfortunate that Dr. Willcox knew before he found the hyoscin that the prisoner had purchased hyoscin. What did that mean, if not that Dr. Willcox, the senior analyst to the Home Office, was going to be dishonest enough to say that a substance was hyoscin when it was not, because it suited the case for the prosecution? That was the suggestion in all its naked absurdity, and he was sorry his learned friend ever made it. What else had he got to set up against Dr. Willcox and the other medical witnesses for the Crown? Scientific witnesses, so called, sometimes made sorry spectacles of themselves in the witness-box, but was there ever a sorrier spectacle than was presented by Mr. Wynter Blyth? Having had read to him this passage from his own book, "Further research has conclusively shown that at present no ptomaine is known which so closely resembles a vegetable poison as to be likely in skilled hands to cause confusion," he said that since he had been instructed in this case he had altered that opinion. He referred to the tests which were applied to discover whether the poison was hyoscin or not, and submitted that the suggestion of any confusion between atropine and hyoscyamin fell to the ground. It was undoubtedly hyoscin which was found in those remains.

That is the case for the Crown. Ask yourselves in this most important case these questions. Where is Belle Elmore? Is your answer to be that she is dead? Then, whose remains were those in the cellar? Is your answer to be Belle Elmore's? If not Belle Elmore's, what conceivable explanation is there? None in the world. Who mutilated her body and put these remains there? Who but the prisoner had the opportunity, the skill, the access to the pieces of pyjama jacket which were found in the grave? How did she die? Is your answer to be of hyoscin poisoning? If not, how did that person die? No sign upon the internal organs which were left, no sign on post-mortem examination, of any cause of death at all except hyoscin poisoning. If your answer is to be that she died of hyoscin poisoning, where did she get it and who administered it? Crippen bought it—it was not much known—on 19th January, and Belle Elmore disappeared from this world on 1st February. Remember always

that it is for the Crown to make out their case. Do not act upon anything against the prisoner unless you are satisfied as reasonable men beyond all reasonable doubt. But if you are so satisfied, determine that this murder, if it be a murder, shall not go unpunished. You are grown men, citizens of London. You are here to do your duty, to perform a difficult and painful task. From that duty a jury of the City of London will not shrink.

Charge to the Jury.

The Lord Chief Justice—Gentlemen of the jury, the last two stages of this great and important case have now arrived, the stage of my discharging my duty in directing you on the facts and on the law; yours, that in the consideration of what your verdict should be when you come to retire and consider this case. This, gentlemen, is no place for compliments, but I cannot resist the temptation of saying that, speaking both of the conduct of the prosecution and the conduct of the defence, the conduct of the learned counsel is a model of what it should be in the conduct of criminal cases.[1] There has practically nothing been said which might not fairly be said for the prosecution and might not fairly be said for the defence. The weight of certain observations made on the one side and the other must of course be criticised, and ought to be criticised, but, speaking of the conduct of the case, it leaves nothing to be desired.

Gentlemen, you were properly warned, both by Mr. Tobin and in his last speech by Mr. Muir, against allowing anything which has been said or published outside this Court to influence your judgment. I know the juries of the City of London too well—again I scorn the idea of suggesting a compliment, but I say this, that I am sure that you know what your duty is, and that you intend to discharge your duty, and that is, to decide this case upon the sworn testimony that you have heard in this Court; and if anything has been said or written for or against this man (and much has been said and written on both sides) you will disregard it. It is one of the unfortunate incidents of our present life that this public discussion of criminal cases takes place beforehand. But I am thankful to say that in the administration of justice, judges, counsel, and juries are able to disregard those influences and discharge their duty.

As regards the obligations in this case, they have been correctly stated by both counsel. They need only my confirmation in a few sentences. It is for the Crown to make out their case. And if you have any reasonable doubt as to whether the Crown have made out their case you must give the prisoner the benefit of the doubt. It is the law of England, and you will do so. But you will have to decide the case upon the whole evidence, and you must not allow what I may call doubts as to whether minor points have been established to influence your judgment, if upon the whole of the evidence you have no doubt as to the result.

[1] See Introduction.—Ed.

Lord Chief Justice

Mr. Tobin in his speech to you, to which I know you paid the greatest attention, used two or three times the expression, "Certainty." Rightly understood, it is not a misleading word; but if by that it is to be supposed that juries are not to act upon the evidence unless it puts them in the position of having actually seen the thing done, it is, of course, a misleading expression. You are to be satisfied upon the whole of the evidence that you e no reasonable doubt as to your verdict, that you have no more dou' chan you would have in any important question of your life upon which you have to take action one way or another. You must be satisfied upon the evidence that the Crown have made out their case; if they have not, then the prisoner is entitled to be acquitted.

Something has been said in this case (I refer to it because I want, if I can, to get away from generalities that do not t ich the important matters in this case) about Dr. Crippen not having given evidence either before the magistrate or before the coroner. I do not agree in the observations made by Mr. Tobin that it is a prudent thing for an innocent man in any case to do what is called "reserve his defence." I think it is an error into which legal advisers have fallen for many years, as the result of an old practice, and the sooner it is recognised that the sooner an innocent man gives his evidence and his statement the better for his case, there will be less difficulty and doubt in dealing with his case. But I do agree with Mr. Tobin that in this case it does not make any material difference. Therefore I shall ask you to dismiss from your minds the fact that he did not give his evidence either before the Police Court or before the coroner. As to what he did say on certain other occasions it is, of course, most important, and the reason why I advise you not to attach too much weight to that argument or that suggestion is, that the Crown were in possession of what would be the case, or must be the case, if I may use the expression, for Dr. Crippen (apart from the medical evidence, which is entirely different) when he made the statement to Inspector Dew upon 8th July. Therefore, with regard to what I may call the facts of the case, apart from the medical testimony, or testimony which is that of opinion based upon the conditions of the remains found, the Crown had the opportunity of investigating it, and they most properly availed themselves of that opportunity by investigating as far as they possibly could the truth of the story when told. And they suggest to you that that story is not true.

Gentlemen, you know what the crime of murder is. It means the causing the death of another intentionally and by your wilful act. I need not in this case discuss other forms of the crime of murder. That is the crime of murder charged here against Dr. Crippen, that he wilfully and intentionally killed his wife, poisoned his wife, and that he mutilated the body, and buried the remains in the cellar at 39 Hilldrop Crescent in order to conceal his crime. From the first word Mr. Muir uttered in opening this case up to the last sentence in his speech to you a few moments ago he has not wavered from that position. There is no question here of suggesting that by some other means, or by some other method, or by some other agency Dr. Crippen caused the death of his wife. The Crown have from

the first stated their case and adhered to it, and that is the case which you have got to try. You need not consider any other.

It involves, of course, two questions, not really independent, but, still, the evidence upon them ought to be considered somewhat separately. The first question is, were the remains found at 39 Hilldrop Crescent the remains of Cora Crippen? If they were not, there is an end of this case. If you find that they were the remains of Cora Crippen, then you have got to ask yourselves, was her death occasioned by the wilful act of the defendant Crippen? If not, again the defendant is entitled to be acquitted. Those are the two issues that you have got to consider, and those are the issues upon which I shall ask you in a short time to concentrate your attention.

It is open to a prisoner in any case to say to the Crown or the prosecution, "You have not made out your case; I, through my counsel, say the evidence for the Crown does not substantiate the crime that you have charged against me." And in many cases, as no doubt you know, that course has been adopted with perfect wisdom, perfect prudence, perfect justice, and prisoners have been acquitted. It is not saying too much to say that in this case, had that course been adopted, Mr. Tobin's task would have been more difficult than it is at present. And therefore he recognised that, and in his opening statement his first words to you were, "As soon as I have sat down, my client Dr. Crippen will go into the box, and I will call medical testimony to rebut the statements of opinion and the statements of fact, so far as they are facts based upon opinion, which the medical witnesses for the Crown have put forward." Therefore, gentlemen, in this case there is imported into the case, quite properly, not what I will call a third issue, but a defence which, if made out, exonerates the defendant altogether. The defendant has not contented himself with saying, "You have not satisfied the jury that these remains are the remains of Cora Crippen." He has not satisfied himself with saying, "You have not satisfied the jury that Cora Crippen, or the woman whose remains are found, died from hyoscin poisoning." He says, "I will tell you what has happened to the woman so far as I can; she is not dead. As far as I know, she left me of her own accord some time after between one and two o'clock or two or three o'clock on 1st February and six and seven o'clock in the evening when I returned to my house on that evening." That is the defence put forward by Dr. Crippen, which you must carefully consider. If made out, you need not trouble any more about whose the remains were. He could not be indicted in this case for being connected with the murder of a woman unknown. If the body in that cellar was not the body of Cora Crippen, but of some other person, Dr. Crippen is entitled to go out of this Court. And therefore his defence is a matter to be examined by you, and as carefully by the counsel for the Crown, as the other defences raised in this case. In addition, as you know, gentlemen, he says, "Even if you, the jury, do not believe my story about my wife leaving me on the morning of the day of 1st February, I am going to say that it is not my wife's body, and the person whose body it is was not killed by poison."

Now, gentlemen, whatever may be your ultimate view in this case, we must all agree, or I suggest to you—let me say once and for all, that if in the course of my summing up I say anything which leads you to think

Lord Chief Justice

that I am expressing an opinion, please disregard it; it is my duty to direct you on the facts; it is your duty to form an opinion as to what those facts establish. Therefore you must not think, in any matter that I am putting before you, if in the mode of my expression I indicate a certain view to you, that I am doing more than submitting it to you. But you will probably come to the opinion that, whatever be the truth in this case, the defendant is an extraordinary man. If he is guilty, as you may think, he is, of course, an extraordinary man. He has committed a ghastly crime; he has covered up that ghastly crime, or endeavoured to, in a ghastly way, and he has behaved with the most brutal and callous indifference after the crime has been committed. If he is an innocent man, it is almost impossible, as you may probably think, to fathom his mind or his character, again absolutely indifferent to the charge made against him of murder; having, according to him, I will not say a ready means, but at any rate the means of doing his utmost to establish his innocence, no step taken of any sort or kind by him. And, although defended by an able solicitor, who, it must be assumed, and will be assured, would have done everything to endeavour to have established the innocence of his client that he could fairly and properly do, no step taken, as far as the evidence before you is concerned, to support and establish by other evidence the case made by Dr. Crippen in the box. I shall have to point out to you in detail in the course of this case, upon certain parts of it, that there is evidence not forthcoming which ought to be forthcoming if the defence is supposed to be made out—I mean the defence of Mrs. Crippen having left on that day.

Inasmuch as in my judgment that is one of the most important parts of the case, and it is an answer conclusive to everything else, I propose to examine the evidence upon that with you first. And I think it necessary to do so for the reason I have already given you, which I think it right to repeat. You are to draw no conclusion whatever against Dr. Crippen unless you are satisfied that the remains in the cellar are the remains of his wife, and that he in fact murdered his wife in the way suggested. You may think in the course of this case possibly, if the evidence does not satisfy you of that which Mr. Muir says it does, that these are the remains of another woman; therefore I must tell you that you must draw no inference whatever against Dr. Crippen if you are not satisfied that the mutilated remains are those of Mrs. Crippen. He is not here on any other charge than that of murdering his wife. Therefore you will see that, having elected not simply to criticise the evidence or answer what may be said to be the medical part of the case, or the part of the case which is based upon what the remains show, he goes into the box and he says, "My wife simply left me on the morning or some time between two o'clock and six o'clock on 1st February last. That is my answer to this case." And, if established, it is a perfectly clear answer. Do not think that I mean that that in any way relieves the Crown from the onus of proving on the whole case, that Crippen did murder his wife. I only refer to it because it is entirely a separate incident in this case; it is an incident which the defendant has raised; he is entitled to do so, as all men before conviction are entitled to have any questions they put fully considered.

In order really to grasp the probabilities of the truth of that story, "

is necessary to examine with some little care the life, the position, and, as far as we can tell it, the character of the people concerned. Of course, you cannot have sat in that box long in the course of this case without probably coming to the conclusion that if it is a simple question of oath against oath, or statement against statement, you cannot rely upon the mere statement made by Dr. Crippen. He has on his own confession lied for his own purpose, and was prepared to lie, if necessary, for the purpose of his own advantage. Even when he was purporting to tell the truth, certain things were false, and false to his own knowledge, though he was asserting the truth. Now, here, again, let me caution you. This is not a Court of morals, this is a Court of law. The fact that Mrs. Crippen, or Belle Elmore, was an immoral woman at some time, the fact that the man confessedly is a very immoral man, and has been living under improper circumstances with Ethel Le Neve, is a matter that you may regret in your own minds; but you must not visit him or find against him the charge that is to be proved because he is an immoral man or because he is a liar. What you are entitled to do is to take into consideration those circumstances where they have a direct bearing upon the question of fact which you are considering. It is quite obvious, from the speeches both of Mr. Tobin and of Mr. Muir, that the fact that Dr. Crippen has lied on material points in this case is a very important matter for your consideration. I will tell you why. I put it, as I think it my duty to do, not in the same words, but in the same way as it has been put a few minutes ago by Mr. Muir. You have got to consider it. It is said by the Crown that Crippen's conduct, Crippen's lies, Crippen's life from 1st February until 8th July, was an impossibility if there was any risk of his wife reappearing. What Mr. Muir put to him, what Mr. Muir has quite properly from the Crown's point of view pressed upon you, is that the story that his wife left him on that 1st of February cannot be true, because of the things that were done by Crippen after that 1st February and down to 8th July. It therefore becomes very material, for you have got now to deal with the whole case—the evidence for the defence as well as the evidence for the Crown. You have got to say whether upon the whole of that evidence—because the Crown may use any part of it—the Crown have made out their case, and it becomes most material to examine with some little care whether the arguments of Mr. Tobin and Mr. Muir on the one side or on the other are well founded or not. Mr. Tobin says, "Belle Elmore may be alive." Mr. Tobin says, "Sometimes people have been convicted of murder when the supposed murdered person was walking about the world; this may be one of those cases; be careful how you act"—a perfectly proper caution. Mr. Muir says, "The life of this man after 2nd February was such that it was an absolute impossibility unless he knew the wife could never appear again."

Now, what was the character of the woman? Her character, her history, and her habits are not disputed by Dr. Crippen or by his counsel; a woman who had had a past, who had married and lived with this man for eighteen years, who, on Dr. Crippen's statement—there again you must be a little careful how you act upon it, though it is possibly true—had not cohabited with him since they went to Hilldrop Crescent in September, 1905; a woman making warm friendships, very popular, very

vivacious, and in a position to her which was a position of very considerable comfort, not wanting in money, having, according to Dr. Crippen, plenty, having a most remarkable amount, not of mere tawdry jewellery, but of valuable jewellery—not only have you had some of the articles produced before you, but you know that the pawnbrokers lent him money upon them, advanced him no less than £80 upon one part and £115 upon another part, and, according to Crippen's statement, he had £90 worth of diamonds upon him still when he was arrested; in other words, it was jewellery such as a person in that class of life would be very fond of. The woman, you have heard, was very fond of clothes, always beautifully dressed, spick and span; therefore she was in a position that many women of that rank of life would aspire to have; the wife of a man who was reputable, at any rate to the public eye, with a perfectly respectable and honest business, living comfortably and happily in Hilldrop Crescent for nearly five years—more than four years—before she disappears. True, they kept no servant, but it is not in the least an uncommon circumstance in life that people in that position, especially where there are no children, have no servant, but do some of the house work with the assistance of a charwoman. It is in evidence before you, and uncontradicted, that she cooked the dinner on that night of 31st January, and they all seem to have enjoyed themselves; therefore the fact that she had no servant does not seem to throw any light upon this matter on one side or the other. She is the treasurer of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild, a very useful institution for the purpose of providing for music hall artistes. She attends regularly every Wednesday. She was seen on all the Wednesdays in January up to the 26th: in fact, the last time that she was seen alive by many of the witnesses was at the meeting of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild on 26th January. She was obviously popular. The witnesses who have been called—there are a good many of them—I will merely run through the names and you will remember their evidence—Mrs. Martinetti, Miss May, Mrs. Harrison, Dr. Burroughs, and Mr. Rylance—those are quite sufficient for the purpose of indicating what I mean—they speak of this lady as being a vivacious and lively person, and a person with keen friendships.

It is not immaterial to remember that according to the statements made in some of the documents in evidence before you, particularly that letter of 2nd April, it is said that she was in the habit of corresponding with her friends on any important events; and it appears from the evidence of Mrs. Martinetti, which you will remember, that when she heard of her going to America, she said at once, "What a strange thing that she should go without telling me."

That is the life of a woman who leaves, on the defendant's statement, upon 1st February, without saying anything more to him than "I will have an end of it; I am going to leave you"; according to the defendant's story, having been angered with him for this perfectly ridiculous and trivial suggestion that because Mr. Paul Martinetti, who wanted to go upstairs to a lavatory, went out of the room—a visitor at his house, according to Crippen, every other week; he says he came to their house and he went to theirs about once a week—after he had gone his wife says that is the reason for her leaving him—nothing to do with another man so far.

Charge to the Jury.

Lord Chief Justice

Then the suggestion made by Dr. Crippen is that she left to go to Bruce Miller. Now, again, we are not here to consider what her relations with Bruce Miller were. It is perfectly true, as Mr. Muir has told you, that people in that class of life probably use more warm expressions or more vigorous expressions than some other people would do. On the other hand, Mr. Tobin is quite entitled to say, of a man who has never seen Dr. Crippen, who admits visiting the wife up to the year 1904, that that sort of communication might mean a great deal more. You have nothing in the world to do with the immoralities, if they were immoralities, of Belle Elmore, any more than you have to do with the immoralities of Dr. Crippen, except in so far as they help you to come to a judgment on the other facts of the case. Mr. Bruce Miller has come here, and has said that he has never seen that lady for the last six years; that he wrote to her at Christmas and the New Year, and that sort of thing; that she never came to him in the year 1910, and that he has never seen her, as I have said, for the last six years. Of course, one most extraordinary thing will probably strike you—that if Crippen honestly believed that the woman had gone to Bruce Miller at Chicago when he made that suggestion that I shall have to refer to later to Mr. Dew on 8th July—you would have thought that there was one channel at least whereby inquiries might be made of a most important character; and probably the thought has occurred to you, if Dr. Crippen believed that his wife had gone, either for a moral or immoral purpose, to visit Bruce Miller, among her own friends, how is it that no inquiry was made by Dr. Crippen of Bruce Miller?

That is all one can say with regard to the probabilities of the case so far as they rest upon the character of Belle Elmore herself. All the witnesses called for the prosecution who knew her, and were members of the guild, expected to see her upon 2nd February, that is to say, upon the Wednesday; they all say so; and you will remember that that was known to Dr. Crippen; because in the letters, which I need not read again—I shall refer to them in a moment in passing—he says that she is not able to go there because of the sudden engagement taking her to America. The letter is written by Dr. Crippen, you will remember, and he sends back the cheque book and asks them to appoint another treasurer.

Now, something has occurred which in the morning of 2nd February makes it necessary for Dr. Crippen to make a communication on Belle Elmore's behalf. You will remember that he takes down—either writes at the place or takes down to Albion House—two letters of 2nd February which were handed by Miss Le Neve according to his statement (and I think Mrs. Martinetti says so), one to the secretary and one to a member of the committee.

What next happens which you must consider? On that 2nd February Crippen pawns jewellery to the value of upwards of £100, and gets £80 for it. You will have to ask yourselves that question which Mr. Muir has put to you—not only why should this woman, fond of dress, take practically no clothing away with her, but why did she not take her jewellery? So far as she was concerned, it was hers; she had enjoyed it. It may be, as Dr. Crippen suggested to you, that he originally bought it, and therefore he claimed to sell it, and on some dispute between

the husband and wife some question of the kind might have arisen; but Belle Elmore when she left, according to Dr. Crippen, on 1st February, would regard that jewellery as hers. You must ask yourselves the question if it is true that that woman left on 1st February, if it is true that she went away, why did she leave the bulk of her jewellery behind her; why did she leave, as far as one can tell, the bulk of her fine clothes behind her—not only the furs which might keep her warm—for they are expensive furs—but furs which were pretty valuable—and women, of course, know the value of furs of that kind. It is a very remarkable incident in this case, and I thought it right to put this to Dr. Crippen myself, "Can you tell me of anything which she took away?" All he could say was that on the evening of 1st of February when he came back the room was in confusion. "Can you tell me of any trunks which were taken away?" "I believe one trunk was taken away." It is a very serious matter, and you must consider it. Can you believe that statement of Belle Elmore leaving the house under those circumstances on 1st February, when she was due at the meeting of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild on the 2nd, with the only excuse given that suggested by Dr. Crippen—leaving practically all her jewellery, and, as far as one can tell, all her clothes behind her. This attracts attention at once; because you will remember that Mrs. Martinetti said that when, knowing the habits of the woman, she asked Crippen what she had taken away, he said he thought she had taken one basket, whereupon Mrs. Martinetti said, "That won't be enough for Belle"; the reply from Crippen, "Oh, she can buy some more clothes"—I think he said—"in New York," it does not matter where for this purpose—in America.

Now, gentlemen, on the 2nd you have got to ask yourselves this question, what is the reason that this man is suddenly found pawning jewellery for £80, and on the 9th pawning jewellery for £115? And here I come to the first two points upon which corroboration, if this story had been true, would have been very valuable. It is not in the least the duty or necessity of the defendant to call corroborative evidence if he is only criticising the evidence of the Crown; but if he is establishing as part of his defence an affirmative story, you are entitled to ask, particularly knowing what sort of a man he is, where are the persons to whom he gave away that money? He says he paid away part of it for advertisements; he says he paid away part of it to advertise some new medicine later on, later in the month of February or early in March. The suggestion was made by the prosecution quite properly to you, where was that money spent? what was it wanted for?—if wanted for the purpose of enjoyment with Ethel Le Neve, or if wanted for the legitimate purposes of his business. Of course in the latter case there would be no difficulty, or ought not to be any difficulty, in giving some corroborative evidence about it. It rests entirely upon the statement made by Dr. Crippen, and by nobody else.

I am not going through all these lying letters. I agree in one sense with the observation made by Dr. Crippen in the box when he said to Mr. Muir, "What is the good of your asking me these questions, because I admit it"; and therefore there is nothing to be gained so far

as you are concerned by reading these letters to you again. It is the most remarkable set of statements that has ever come to my notice, beginning by saying that his wife has been taken ill at St. Louis in America; going on with the statement that it was pleuro-pneumonia; and then that he had received a telegram that she was very ill, and that he had received letters from her in which she was trying to make out that she was better, and finally, on 24th March, sending that telegram to Mrs. Martinetti, "Poor Belle died yesterday; please tell Annie." Nothing is to be gained as far as your consideration and mine are concerned by going through the details of it. They are established by the Crown; they are not disputed by Dr. Crippen; in fact, he says they are part of his scheme for covering up the scandal. I do not repeat what has been said by the counsel for the prosecution—what the scandal was it is difficult to see. The importance of it is this, that this misrepresentation went on for a period, practically speaking, of nearly six months—from 1st February until 8th July—not quite six months. I do not refer to his going to the ball and all that kind of thing. Certainly the letter of 11th April, the one that was produced here for the first time, written to "My Dear Louise and Robert," is a most remarkable letter—giving every detail, that she would not take proper care of herself, and how the disease began with a cold, and she got worse; next, of his getting a cable that she was dangerously ill—culminating with the telegram to Mrs. Martinetti, "Belle died yesterday," and the advertisement or announcement in *The Era* of the "Death of Belle Elmore, Mrs. Crippen."

The question you have got to ask yourselves is that which has been put to you more than once in the course of this case by the counsel for the prosecution; I only repeat it because I cannot see any better way of putting it to you; was that possible except with the knowledge that the wife could not appear? Friends in America, gone to America, friends at home making inquiries; put off, hoodwinked—we need not care about the dates, but hoodwinked in a disgraceful way by mourning black-edged paper, and so forth. Do not consider it from the point of view of taste. Consider it from the point of view of upon which side the truth lies. If you come to the conclusion that the game was so enormously dangerous that Dr. Crippen could not have possibly carried it out if he thought his wife might appear again, you will ask yourselves, can you believe the story that his wife left him on 1st February.

As I have said, the case is not a pleasant one; on the contrary, this case is painful from beginning to end. There is nothing to be gained by recalling the lies or repeating them again; they have been stated to you in the course of the evidence; the letters have been read. If you care to have any one at the proper time you shall have it. But the broad point you have to consider is this, in the case of the Martinettis, in the case of Dr. Burroughs, in the case of Miss May, and the case of Mrs. Harrison, and the case of others—letters to America—if Belle Elmore is in the living flesh would it have been possible—would even the defendant have had the courage to do what he did? But, then, you must take into consideration in connection with what Mr. Muir has perfectly properly said to you, that nearly five months have passed since this event. The newspapers in two

continents have been full of the case. The man was arrested, as you know, in consequence of the agency of this new invention, wireless telegraphy; there is no doubt about that; it is a matter that could not have been established but for that invention; that part is common knowledge; he is arrested in Canada, and then the story is known all over the world. It is a very serious suggestion to make to you, as it is made by the counsel for the defence, that Belle Elmore may be alive. If Belle Elmore is alive, is it possible to think that this has not come to her knowledge? Does that man in the dock mean to suggest that so bad is this woman who was his wife for eighteen years, and whom, apart from her being angry and bad tempered, he does not make any serious complaint against—that she is so mean and so abominably wicked as to allow this man to stand his trial in the dock without making any communication or anything of the kind? That is what you have got to consider in this part of the case. That has nothing to do, as I have told you already, with the question of whether the Crown have proved their affirmative case. In order to answer it the defendant has elected to put before you evidence entirely of his own, but still his own evidence, in which he says, "The whole thing is a myth; I know nothing about the remains in the cellar; I do not pretend to give any explanation; but, as far as my wife is concerned, it was an ordinary case of a woman going off with another man; she left me, and I told these lies because she said 'cover up the scandal as best you can.'" It must not be forgotten that it does not develop into a charge of murder until the month of July. I am a little anticipating, but you will have to ask yourselves later on, when you come to see what the defendant was doing in the month of July, whether or not it is quite consistent with the statement that he was only covering up the scandal. You would think, or, rather, I suggest to you that you may think, that when on the 8th of July it was suggested that he must find his wife, or that serious trouble would come, at least then the sense of natural preservation, to say nothing of honesty, would lead him to take steps to find her.

Now, gentlemen, I have left that part of the case. As I have told you, I have dealt with it first because, if you believe the story for the defence, it is a conclusive answer to this charge, and you need not trouble about the other points. You have heard such speeches from the learned counsel that that is not necessary; but I have dealt with this part of the case because it is a separate issut altogether, and if, upon considering the whole of this case, you come to the conclusion that you are not satisfied with Crippen's account, then you have to consider with me whether the Crown have established their case upon the two issues of Cora Crippen's remains being those found in the house, and of that woman having been poisoned by the act of the defendant. Of course, if that is true, it is a further contradiction in terms of the story he has told you; but I felt it right, as this case has been seriously raised by the defendant and insisted upon quite properly by his counsel who represents him, to put before you the probabilities on the one side and on the other as far as we can gather them from the evidence, and you will have to ask yourselves can you believe that story, that the wife went away, in face of what the defendant was doing—impossible, as

Charge to the Jury.

Mr Muir says, unless he knew that the wife's mouth never could be opened to answer the lies falling from him. Gentlemen, it will be convenient to break off there.

The Foreman of the Jury—One of my fellow-jurymen wants to know whether your lordship will allow him to look at one of those bottles again—the specimens in the jar?

The Lord Chief Justice—I am coming to that part of the case. I will see that that is sent to you—I will deal with that part of the case later.

(Adjourned for a short time.)

The Lord Chief Justice—Gentlemen of the jury, I shall be able to condense into a comparatively short space of time the observations I have to make upon the other issues in the case; they were very fully considered by Mr. Tobin for the defence and by Mr. Muir for the prosecution, and I do not propose to go over the same points. I will refer to them, and sum them up in the course of my examination with you of some of the material points. I assume now that you will approach the case from the point of view of considering whether the Crown have made out their case, and not from the point of view of considering whether the defendant's story of the wife having gone away is correct.

Now, the first and important question is, how long were those remains in the ground? You will remember that from the 29th September—I think, to be accurate, the 21st September, 1905—this house in Hilldrop Crescent had been in the occupation of Dr. and Mrs. Crippen. It is a small semi-detached house, with the ground floor rather high up—high steps going up to the ground floor; a kitchen and what has been called a breakfast room below, two rooms on the ground floor, two rooms above, and two rooms above that. Now, nobody has been there since September, 1905, except Dr. Crippen and his wife. Mr. Muir asked Dr. Crippen—it was only, of course, a formal question—whether he had any suggestion to make as to who had done this, or who could have put those remains there, and he could not give any explanation. He is not in the least bound to give any explanation, unless you think there is affirmative evidence that compels him to do so. Therefore the first and most important thing is, how long had the remains been there?

Fortunately, for the interests of justice, there are certain things which may enable you to fix that pretty accurately, and perhaps the most important thing is the pyjama jacket. I apprehend that you would like when you retire to have that pyjama jacket, and I think the trousers, exhibit 48, and the two jars with the jacket; they shall be in your room, so that you can examine them. You shall have a magnifying glass, so that you can see them. You are, of course, to act upon the evidence, but you may test the evidence for yourselves in any way you like by fair examination. The Crown say—two witnesses for the Crown have sworn it—(and it is very remarkable, as Mr. Muir said to you this morning, that the witnesses for the defence do not contradict it) that examining the piece of pyjama jacket in the bottle and the pyjama trousers, the number of threads in the

count are the same. At any rate, you can see that the pattern is the same; of course, that which has been in the ground, and has been in all sorts of spirits, will not look the same, but they say you can trace. There is also upon the piece of pyjama jacket undoubtedly—there is no doubt about that—the identical label, "Jones Brothers, Limited, Holloway, N.," and when it was put to Dr. Crippen yesterday, and he was asked to look at it, he said they looked very much like. I am not sure that it was put to any other witnesses for the defence, nor does it matter, because you have the evidence for the prosecution on the one side, and you must be satisfied, of course, that they are right. We have now got beyond all question when that pyjama jacket was bought and sold—"Jones, Limited," did not become a limited company until 1906. That takes you, of course, far back, but still it shows that it is during Crippen's tenancy of the Hilldrop Crescent house. In addition to that, it is now established that three sets of pyjamas, of which those trousers formed one, were sold on the 5th January, 1909. It was put by the Crown that they were bought by the wife, and paid for by the wife. I do not think that that is established. What is established is that they were delivered and 17s. 9d. paid for them at 39 Hilldrop Crescent, with two other classes of articles, on the 5th January; Mr. Chilvers, who was not cross-examined, establishes that so far as his evidence goes, if you believe that he is making no mistake. Therefore, if the piece in the jar is, on the evidence, to your satisfaction established to be of the same material as the trousers, which are not quite the same pattern as the other two, that establishes the fact, or is evidence on which you may come to the conclusion that what was found in the grave was a jacket belonging to that third set of pyjamas. It is said, and said quite truly, that the trousers are somewhat worn. We have not heard anything of the somewhat interesting account given by Mr. Tobin as to how the jacket wears out and the trousers do not; I really know nothing about that; I did not quite appreciate it, and I do not think you did, and it has not very much to do with the case, because we have to deal with the evidence. If you should come to the conclusion that the pyjama jacket bought on the 5th January, 1909, was worn off and on during the year 1909, and that those trousers, of which it formed part when they were sold, were in use, then you get this fact, that there is evidence of a suit of pyjamas being sold on the 5th January, 1909, worn from time to time during the year 1909, and the jacket of that suit is found in the grave. If so, not only does it make it after the 5th January, 1909, but it makes it so long after the 5th January, 1909, that the trousers at any rate present a worn appearance. Whether or not that stuff in the bottle which has been in the grave was also worn I do not pretend to say, and I do not think it matters very much.

Now, gentlemen, that is a most important matter; and it is a very unfortunate thing for the defence, so far as this is concerned, that no explanation is suggested of how the pyjama jacket bought in the year 1909, if it be the same, is in the grave. Of course, the suggestion of the prosecution is that, having to wipe things up, or to wrap things up, that jacket was used, and then put with other things into the remains, it never being thought that they would come to human sight again. The evidence

given by Dr. Crippen yesterday I do not think is much worth while calling attention to, because in the box, as out of it, he certainly was ready to make statements which he afterwards had to admit not to be true. He at first said with great confidence that his wife never bought pyjamas, that he always preferred to buy them himself. He then said with equal confidence that those sets were part of two which he bought in September of last year, 1909, and that the trousers were part of an old set which he bought some time back. When he was further pressed by Mr. Muir, who put it to him distinctly that they were bought by his wife at a sale at Jones in January, 1909, he said it might be so; and when I pointed out to him that he had sworn exactly the contrary, and that his wife had never bought pyjamas for him, he said he had been too confident in answering the first question. You must judge him, you have heard him, and I can say no more. No explanation is offered or suggested as to how these pyjamas got there; but we know that, if this evidence is true, they must have been put there considerably later than January, 1909.

Now, the witnesses for the Crown put the period in which the remains were, or might have been, in the ground, at four to eight months. It is agreed that unless you see the remains of a body in the ground pretty soon after they are removed you cannot form any opinion at all. I am not going through that part of the evidence. You have heard the evidence of the doctor. He said he thought at first a much shorter period, but when he found the amount of adipocere, which is the softening, I understand, or the change in the fatty parts, he thought it must have been something like four months, and from the small putrefaction of other parts he considered it could not be longer than eight months. Mr. Tobin has read, and read with the entire approval of the witnesses for the prosecution, extracts from a medical work to the effect that it is difficult to tell for what period a body has been buried; that one body will remain unchanged much longer than another buried in the same soil. Gentlemen, it is for you to say, but it would seem a very small matter if you come to the conclusion that it must have been after January, 1909, because, as has been truly said by Mr. Muir, no other person has disappeared, and you have got to account in some way or other for the presence in this grave of those remains.

Assuming that you are satisfied that they had been in the grave within such a time as is consistent with Cora Crippen's disappearance, are they the remains of Cora Crippen's body? We now come to a question, which I agree with Mr. Muir may be stated in two ways, are the remains the remains of a woman? if they are the remains of a woman, was that woman Cora Crippen? Gentlemen, that they are the remains of a woman now is really not seriously disputed. It is perfectly true that with regard to a part of the [illegible] of really great importance, the scar, which I will come to in a few moments, Dr. Willcox, I think it was or one of the witnesses for the Crown, said with very great candour that the scar would not indicate a man or a woman, because you might have a scar in that place, the middle of the stomach, upon a man, for certain operations of the bladder and so on, or at the back. But you will ask yourselves, if some person was for some purpose murdered and had

Lord Chief Justice

interred the remains, and they were not those of a woman, why should the body be clothed in a woman's vest? why should there be a woman's vest with lace on the arms? which, of course, you know only adorns the garments of women who like that kind of adornment; why should there be the woman's combinations? and why should there be one, two, or, I think three Hinde's hair curlers with hair in them, not disputed by any witness for the defence to be woman's hair?

Gentlemen, I think I may pass for the purpose of your consideration from the question of whether it was a man or woman. Of course, if it was a man, again the defendant is entitled to walk out of that dock.

Now, being a woman, was that Cora Crippen or not? The evidence here, though not so certain, because there are many women with brown hair, and many we know who dye their hair, is not unimportant. The pieces of hair were shown to Mrs. Harrison. She said that the unbleached portions that she could see corresponded with what she had seen in lifetime; that she had seen Belle Elmore's, Mrs. Crippen's hair down, and there were portions near the root which were brown; and Crippen in his evidence admits that to be in accordance with the facts, although he says that you could only see the brown hair near the roots, which would be quite natural if she dyed it pretty often, because Belle Elmore was very particular about the light-coloured hair being seen. That is an incident in this case; it is for you to say whether it is true or not. It has not been cross-examined on. On the other hand it may not have been so important, but you must consider it. One witness has said that a certain portion of the hair is pubic hair, which would be dry; that was brown hair corresponding with the undyed portion of the other hair, which may have come from the head. Therefore there is that piece of evidence in connection with the identity of the remains, supplemented by what I have already mentioned to you in another connection in point of time, that in the grave is found the pyjama, the property of Crippen, if it be so established, and the parts of the dress which it is said by Mrs. Harrison are similar to those which were always worn by Mrs. Crippen.

I come now to that which has been the battleground in this case, and that is that piece of flesh. You have seen it more than once. It has been a gruesome task, but we have had to see it; we have heard the evidence upon it, and I am not going through it again, but I am going to remind you of what the dispute is. For that purpose I will very briefly take Mr. Pepper's evidence and Dr. Turnbull's evidence, who are the two rivals. Mr. Pepper says it undoubtedly comes from the lower part of the abdomen of a woman. It is not to be forgotten—Mr. Muir did not attach any too much importance to it—that when it was examined into at the Police Court, on the report of Dr. Wall and Dr. Turnbull, Mr. Newton was instructed that it never came from the abdomen at all; and you heard in Court yesterday from Dr. Turnbull and Dr. Wall the reasons for their statement, which they then made with every confidence, that as there were no characteristic aponeuroses it could not be abdominal. That they stated as their reason for the report. There is no blame to Mr. Newton, nor to the defendant for this purpose. Mr. Newton was so

instructed, and did cross-examine—I am speaking of the proceedings at the Police Court—on the footing that it was not abdominal at all.

Now, take those two witnesses. I say nothing about the way in which they gave their evidence. It is always unpleasant to criticise expert witnesses. You saw the difficulty they were in. It amounted to this, that they could not suggest any part of the body from which it could come, consistently with what they found there, except the lower part of the abdomen, and the characteristic answer was given by Dr. Turnbull, which I will read to you from my own note. "The aponeurosis is split in the way it is found in the lower part of the abdomen." Mr. Pepper and the other witnesses for the Crown say that the piece which they examined has got the aponeurosis in it, and further say, for reasons they gave you—and I am not going through that again—that they had no doubt that it came from the lower part of the abdomen. That is not now disputed. It turns out, though I daresay Mr. Tobin did not mislead me, I was not so far wrong in thinking that the cross-examination was directed to show that it came from another part of the body, because it does turn out now that that was the case in the Police Court. Therefore you have the evidence before you, not contradicted—nay, acquiesced in by the defendant's witnesses, that it came from the lower part of the abdomen.

Now is that a scar or not? There has been a little misunderstanding about this part of the case, and I want to make it plain to you. It is not now disputed that Belle Elmore had a scar in that place due to an operation for ovarotomy, which means taking out the ovaries. It extended roughly, up to, or near, if not as far as the navel. It was originally 6 inches long, and subsequently contracted. In addition to the suggestion made about the poison, and having heard that poison had been found, it was also suggested that before these gentlemen made their examination they knew that she had a scar. If they did, it was perfectly right that they should know it, because they had to look for what would identify the body, and I cannot understand what was meant by the suggestion that it was "unfortunate" that they knew that Belle Elmore had a scar.

You are dealing with a piece of flesh which is very different from what it was when it first went into the ground, and all the medical men agree that it would have been much easier to judge if the piece of flesh had been seen sooner. The medical men for the Crown saw it sooner, but not much sooner. Mr. Pepper says, and he is supported by Dr. Spilsbury, Dr. Marshall, and Dr. Willcox, "This is a scar similar to that which I have seen over and over again on the stomach or abdomen of a woman who has had this operation done; as a rule, with women it is wider near the bottom than it is towards the top, and it presents exactly the appearances that Belle Elmore's operation would present." Further than that, they said, "I examined it for sebaceous glands and for hair follicles, and in the scar properly so called there are none." Further, Dr. Spilsbury said there is enclosed (I think it is called) in the scar a piece of epidermis that has come from the side, and in that you can see both the sebaceous glands and the follicles, because they correspond with the uncut skin, if I may use the expression, on the other side.

Remember at the time this was before the Police Court in the

first instance, the scar was unimportant from the point of view of the defence, because their case was that this was not the abdomen at all. It goes from the buttock to the top of the thigh, or it is somewhere else, and I do not know that we need trouble at all about that. When they come into Court here they, for the first time, develop this theory. They say if you examine the scar you will find in the scar properly so-called one sebaceous gland and four or five, I think, hair follicles, which was the thing which Dr. Spilsbury had spoken to in connection with the included piece. When Dr. Turnbull is cross-examined as to the possibility of there being an included piece of epidermis in the scar he says, "I have read of this happening, but I have never seen it." The witnesses for the Crown tell you that they have seen it repeatedly. You will judge as between these witnesses which is right.

It is frankly admitted by the Crown that if in an ordinary piece of scar there are sebaceous glands and hair follicles, that is not scar proper, but they point out to you that you may have that appearance locally in a part of the scar, and, rightly or wrongly—it is entirely for you—the witnesses for the Crown swear that there are no sebaceous glands in the scar proper, whereas there are sebaceous glands on either side. Gentlemen, you and I had a further examination yesterday—of course, in the presence of the prisoner's counsel. There was one remarkable piece of evidence given not contradicted by Dr. Turnbull, although I do not say he assented to it, because, of course, he had given evidence to the contrary. Mr. Pepper said, you can see under the magnifying glass in that scar, practically speaking, the irregular line of the knife from top to bottom. Now, if that is so, gentlemen (you will be able to judge when you come to look at it again), we need not trouble much more about it. Mr. Tobin made a point of this—and he is quite entitled to ask your consideration to it—that on that piece of flesh there is no navel. The witnesses for the Crown admit that the muscle went up as far as the navel, and probably round it, but they say they think the navel has been removed from that piece of skin. Mr. Tobin, I think, three or four times said to you that Mrs. Martinetti said she saw the woman's navel, and Crippen's evidence, though I am afraid you must take it with some reserve, was that his wife had a navel. You will have to ask yourselves, if a woman looks at another woman's stomach casually, and there is a scar which excites her attention, which comes up to the position of the navel; navels are a different shape, sometimes there are projections, and so on—do you think that what is said to have been seen by Mrs. Martinetti is sufficient to contradict the evidence which you have heard on the other side, if it is satisfactory to you?

I do not propose to read again at length to you the reasons given by the defendant's two witnesses for saying that it is not a scar. I remind you again that they were prepared up to the 7th October to say that there was no aponeurosis at all, that there was nothing upon the skin or flesh which would enable you to put the piece of flesh into its place upon the body, that it came from the thigh or the buttock. When they are cross-examined they entirely abandon that position and say that the best opinion they can give now, with all their examination, is that it came from the place in which it was sworn that it came from by the witnesses for the

Crown, namely, from the lower part of the abdomen. Gentlemen, you will, of course, consider all that evidence, but you must regard with some reserve the evidence of a man who has given such positive evidence that it was not the abdomen, and has abandoned that, and has fallen back upon there being no scar. If the appearance of the one sebaceous gland and the five follicles of hair is due to the fact that there was an included piece of epidermis, the whole matter is explained without any difficulty. It is entirely for you. We are dealing with a mark which is some 6 inches long —I do not know exactly, but that is near enough—and in which it is said by the witnesses for the Crown they can see the marks of the knife. If so, it is a very remarkable coincidence. In order to satisfy you that it is not Cora Crippen, the defence must have satisfied you that there is no scar there. Coupled with the pyjama and the camisole and the combinations and the vests, you have to ask yourselves have you any doubt that that is the body of Cora Crippen?

Now, I must for one moment consider the theory of Dr. Turnbull. I wish to speak with great respect, and it is not for me, and it is not for you, to judge. You saw him in the witness-box. You saw him roll that piece of flesh over twice. They account for the left side of the horse shoe, as Mr. Tobin called it, by saying it is caused by a fold, and in order to make it the shape, broader at the bottom and narrower at the top, you have to fold it twice over, and you saw yesterday that with the piece of flesh, which then would be freshly cut from the body, it is possible either to extend it or to fold it twice over. You must ask yourselves why anybody who was burying the body should roll it over twice. One cannot understand why; it is entirely for you. If you think it possible, of course, you may attach importance to the theory of the rolling over. But observe what you have to deal with. You have got a mark which resembles a scar, sworn by the witnesses for the Crown to the best of their belief to be a scar similar to scars they have frequently seen, sworn by the witnesses for the defence to be not a scar at all, but to be caused by a fold. Gentlemen, it is entirely for you. If you come to the conclusion that that piece of flesh was the abdomen with the scar on it, the mark of an operation for ovariotomy—if you come to the conclusion that it was put into the grave with hair and hair curlers, the hair dyed in the way that Cora Crippen dyed hers, corresponding with the undyed part of the hair on her pubis, and buried with the pyjamas and the other garments, it is for you to say, have you any doubt that that is the body of Cora Crippen?

That brings me, not to the last, but to the last point but one—the last part of the evidence so far as it depends upon medical testimony—what was the cause of death, who put that body there, was it the same person who killed her or not? Well, these hypotheses only need to be stated to be answered. You will not think, probably, that there was more than one person mixed up in this, and probably you will be of opinion that examining the question of who killed her answers the question of who buried her. A great deal has been said, not unnaturally, by Mr. Tobin as to the skill of the man who did it. It has been sworn by the witnesses for the prosecution that a man who had studied in anatomical schools and had seen dissection, and had a knowledge of anatomy, would have quite sufficient knowledge to do this. Answer by Crippen, not that he has not sufficient

Lord Chief Justice

knowledge, but that he has not sufficient practical experience, and has never done a post-mortem examination in his life. Again, it is entirely for you, but, as I have said, in all probability you will be of opinion that the person who caused the death of Cora Crippen took steps to get rid of the body. That is the natural thing that a man would do who had committed a great crime.

Now, was she poisoned or was she not? That is entirely for you. You have got evidence that every organ was healthy, and you have got evidence in the early part of the case that on the night of the 31st January, and on the 26th January, and for weeks before, the woman was in perfect health and spirits, no suggestion of illness or ailment, and no organ shown to be affected. Can you account for death by any natural cause? And, again, although Mr. Tobin has cross-examined with great ability as to whether the Crown were right in specialising hyoscin, he has not suggested any other cause for death than poisoning. It is possible, of course, that the woman may have been stabbed, or shot, or something else, but the remarkable thing is that there is no wound on the part of the body that is there, except what is necessary to separate it from surrounding things, showing to a certain extent some medical knowledge, if not very high medical knowledge. The doctors said that there was no wound on any one of the organs they examined, there was the heart, liver, and the kidneys, and one or two things I need not mention, and there was no wound except what was necessary to separate it and take it out.

Now, the Crown start with their examination. Here I simply endorse what was fairly put to you by Mr. Muir. When people are conducting an examination by analysis, the result of which could only be established by analysis, I do not think it is right to suggest that it is "unfortunate" that they knew that the man had bought hyoscin. They were looking for several things. Mr. Tobin did say that he did not mean to pass any imputation, and we ought to make great allowance for Mr. Tobin, but I do not think, if you are satisfied with Dr. Willcox's evidence, that you ought to come to the conclusion that he was influenced one single bit by what he knew; he has sworn he was not. And what did he tell you? He said, "I examined the remains; I took parts of the liver, the kidney, and so on; I went through a process which lasted a fortnight or three weeks. I first found strychnine and another poison; of course, I disregarded that; then I tried to see if I could get the alkaloids, and I was able to distinguish it as being a vegetable alkaloid. As far as my medical knowledge goes, and as far as the medical knowledge of any book produced up to the present time goes, Vitali's test, which is to find out whether an alkaloid is a vegetable or an animal alkaloid, is only operative in the three vegetable alkaloids—atropine, hyoscyamin, and hyoscin; none of the others gives a purple colour." Dr. Willcox says, "I did say that I did not know what I was going to find, but I looked to find a vegetable alkaloid, and I found it must be a vegetable alkaloid." And remember, upon the question whether it might be animal alkaloid, the result of putrefaction, the only man who has ever got an animal alkaloid at all from any body, meat, or human flesh, is Dr. Luff. Therefore, so far as evidence goes, both of literature and fact, there is no witness who has pretended that an animal alkaloid has been found to respond with Vitali's test. Then, said Dr. Willcox, "I

had to distinguish between atropine, hyoscyamin, and hyoscin. I applied the bromide test; I should have applied the heat test if I could, but you do not get in a human body that has been poisoned enough to apply the heat test; I could not use it." It is not as if he said he did not know of the test, or did not think it a good test, but he could not use it. "I used the bromide test, and under that crystals would have come out if it was atropine or hyoscyamin, gummy or resinous matter would be produced if it was hyoscin; I found the gummy matter. I tried it again on pure matter, with the same result." He also said, before he found the vegetable alkaloids, he found that all four of the solutions were mydriatic, that is to say, they affected the eye by paralysing the pupil, and that was not disputed as a test by Mr. Tobin. Dr. Willcox further said, "I took genuine specimens and applied these tests, and they exactly correspond with what I found;" and Dr. Luff said, "I went through the same operations. Dr. Willcox's tests are the best that can be applied, and they produced the conclusions that he has vouched." Not one single witness on behalf of the defence has ventured to say that that is wrong. Dr. Wynter Blyth, who came here, said that he quite agreed that Vitali's test identified the vegetable alkaloids, so far as present knowledge was concerned, but he said he thought—either on the faith of some Italian book or because he had changed his opinion—that it would be found that there would be some animal alkaloids which might give the same results. Gentlemen, it is entirely for you. You have got to act upon the evidence, you must ask yourselves: have you any doubt that the evidence of Dr. Willcox and Dr. Luff is right? That of Dr. Willcox is most important upon this—that he found hyoscin in the body—in the stomach, kidney, intestines, and liver.

I am not an expert, and I do not pretend to understand these things, but what I assume in the suggestion is this, that when hyoscin is given it gets into the blood, and by the blood goes into the various organs, and therefore if the person has been poisoned you would expect to get traces of it in the various organs. Dr. Willcox says, "In the whole body I calculate that there was as much as half a grain, and that is not denied to be a dangerous, in fact, a poisonous dose, a dose that never ought to be given to any human being." If you come to the conclusion that hyoscin to that extent, or anything like it, was found in the body, you will have to ask yourselves, have you any doubt that that woman, by whomsoever it was done, was poisoned by hyoscin? If the cross-examination of Dr. Willcox, very properly administered to him by Mr. Tobin, leads you to the conclusion that he was mistaken, or anything of that kind, then, of course, you may reject his evidence, but for your own satisfaction, if you are going to do something of that kind, you probably ought to have some theory of your own as to what else caused the death. Because, again, it is not the fault of the defence—it may be said to be their misfortune—healthy organs, healthy woman, if Cora Crippen's remains buried in the grave, no cause of death suggested. The one test as to whether it was a vegetable alkaloid is said by Dr. Wynter Blyth to have been the right test, and, although he says he has changed his opinion, he has never himself found an animal mydriatic alkaloid that acted in the same way under Vitali's test. Given that it is one of the three vegetable alkaloids, I suppose it makes some difference, though not much; we have not been told how much

more or less poisonous atropine is than hyoscin; it does not matter, because nobody denies that if you cannot get enough for the melting point test, the bromide test is the right one. You must make up your minds whether there was hyoscin in the body, and whether death was caused by it. What is the effect of hyoscin poison? How can it be administered? It has a bitter taste, but can be readily given in beer, stout, or coffee, or anything that disguises the taste. It produces pain at first, delirium, paralysing of the pupils, drowsiness, coma, and unconsciousness, and death in anything from one to twelve hours. Therefore, from the point of view we are considering, what happened in that house? Some one gave Belle Elmore hyoscin, and she became unconscious, comatose, and died, and there was the dead woman in the house.

Where did that hyoscin come from? It may be a coincidence, gentlemen. It is entirely for you. Are you satisfied with the account the defendant has given of what he had to do with the hyoscin bought on 19th January—never bought before in England by him, never bought since; two-thirds of it used, made up into hundreds, if not thousands, of little tabloids, little pieces of sugar, I suppose, or something of that kind, put into bottles, kept in a cabinet in his room, and the remainder of the hyoscin left in his room when he went away. Where are those bottles? You must ask yourselves, are you satisfied with that account? He has given his account; it is for you to say whether you believe it; but, in any event, if you are satisfied that hyoscin was in the body, where did it come from?

Now, one of your body asked me to put a question with reference to the prescription, as to whether or not it ever was given through the mouth. In all probability that has not become immaterial, because I think Dr. Willcox's evidence went too far; there does seem to be evidence from the book put in this morning by Mr. Tobin of fifteen years' standing that in some cases of mania, and that kind of disease, it was administered by the mouth as well as hypodermically. But before I leave this part of the case there is another question you must consider, and that is this. Crippen gives his evidence himself. He says, "In my practice chiefly I specialise in the eye, the ear, the nose, and the throat, or for any of those except nervous diseases." It is quite right to ask yourselves, if you are not satisfied with his statement, whether or not he would have had some evidence as to those bottles being sent out, other than his own word. Nothing of the kind is forthcoming. You will have to ask yourselves whether the Crown have satisfied you on the evidence that those were the remains of Cora Crippen, that she died from hyoscin poison, that that hyoscin poison was administered by the only man who was in the house, there being no suggestion that anybody else either had a grudge against the woman or ever was there, or under the circumstances could be.

One word, and it arises upon the account which he has given himself of it. Although "prescriptions" have been spoken of, it may be that he speaks of prescriptions in another sense. No prescription has been produced, and he says that what he meant was that he prescribed for patients by giving them a drug. Now, to all this Mr. Tobin has made two or three broad and very strong answers—nothing to do with the facts of the case, but based upon general considerations. He says, first of all, if he killed Cora Crippen (speaking of the 1st February, or the afternoon of the 1st,

or any time upon the 1st), he never would have taken Ethel Le Neve to sleep there upon the 2nd. Secondly, he says, a kind-hearted man would not do that kind of thing. Now, I must again caution you, though it has been already pointed out by Mr. Muir—this is one of the facts which are not unimportant—it is by no means clear on the evidence that Ethel Le Neve did go to sleep there on the night of the 2nd. If she did, it is after the letters have been delivered; still, that is a small point. It is not consistent with Mrs. Jackson's evidence, which was that only during February did she ever sleep away at all, and that she did not go really thoroughly away, or sleep away, that is to say, sleep away every night, until March. This is one of the matters on which other evidence might have been given. If the defence were going to rely on Ethel Le Neve's sleeping there on the 2nd, it would have been much more important, having regard to the character of Crippen's evidence, that his evidence on that fact should have been supported.

Now, gentlemen, I have done with the evidence as it bears directly upon the cause of death.

I have now a very few words to say to you upon a most important part of the case, and that is the conduct of the accused. From the 2nd February till the 8th July he lives his ordinary life, he goes about; he does not change his habits. There is some suggestion about his leaving his house, which may be quite accidental—I should attach no importance to that if I were you—but he did give you the account of how he wanted to leave the house in June. On the 8th July Dew goes to him. Now, you have had Inspector Dew's statement put before you, and you heard it read more than once. The only important thing in Dew's statement for the present consideration is, not the lies that the accused told, which he admits now were lies, namely, the letters and all the statements about his wife being dead—but the things he said were true were not consistent with the facts as proved. He was at the trouble to show Inspector Dew the jewels, exhibits 7, 8, 9, 10, and 11; you will remember they were handed up to you, and those are the same that were found sewn in his undervest when he was arrested at Quebec; he was at the trouble to show Dew that his wife must have taken the other jewels with her. Now, one has to make every allowance for a man in a difficult position; he says, "She had other jewellery, and must have taken that with her," but, when you are dealing with a man who is supposed to be speaking the truth, and who is asking you to believe that his wife had gone away, you cannot forget the fact that he had pawned a very considerable portion of that jewellery on 2nd February, the day after she disappeared, and on 9th February, seven days afterwards. He says, "I have never pawned or sold any jewellery belonging to her before or after I left her." He says afterwards, "I thought it was my property." It may be that that taken by itself may be so construed; it may be so understood; but the important thing is that he said that she had taken it with her and he follows that up by the statement about pawning. Then he says, and I suggest to you that it is one of the most important things, "I shall, of course, do all I can to get in touch with her and clear this matter up." Gentlemen, on that day he, with the assistance of Inspector Dew, drafts an advertisement offering a reward, to be published in the

papers, to endeavour to find Belle Elmore. He never sent it. If he believed that his wife could be found, why should not he have sent it? His answer to me yesterday was, "I thought if I got away they would not trouble about me any more." This is his idea, I suppose, of English justice.

Now, it has been for years a test applied in these Courts, and it ought to be applied. How did the man behave when the charge was brought against him? You have heard his answers to Mr. Muir, and to his own counsel, and to me, "I have read romances, and I thought I might be arrested and kept in jail for months on suspicion because of my wife's disappearance," his story being that she had left him. Gentlemen, we are not children, and he is not a child. Is that argument satisfactory to you? You have it that, living there in the same name, carrying on his business, consorting with Ethel Le Neve for practically six months, the day after the inspector goes to his house he alters his name and flees—goes to Antwerp, appears under the name of Robinson, induces Le Neve to disguise herself as a boy, passes Le Neve off as his son, and endeavours to escape to Canada; and he would no doubt have got there but for Inspector Dew being able to catch him. There is probably not much importance in what he said to Miss Curnow, "If anything happens to me, please give what you have there to Miss Le Neve," except that it is not consistent with his going off with Le Neve as he did. This conduct is for you to take into consideration; only, of course, if you are of opinion that the Crown have established a case to answer, you are bound to take it into your consideration. Gentlemen, I do not attach very much importance to what he said at Quebec, but there is certainly one expression which it is very difficult to reconcile with the facts. He said to Inspector Dew, "It is only fair to say she knows nothing about it." What did that "it" mean? Did it mean his statement that his wife had gone away, and that he had said she was dead? He said yesterday, "I only told her that my wife had left me, and that she was dead." The comments upon that statement, gentlemen, you have heard made by the learned counsel; it is for you to say whether you believe the story about the plot with the quartermaster, which you ought to hesitate to believe upon his statement alone. It will be for you to say whether that helps him. It is only another attempt to fly from justice, if it is so, because his own story is that he was going to be smuggled out of the ship and put on shore secretly at Montreal.

Now, gentlemen, I am conscious that in dealing with this case I have not dealt with or referred to every passage of the evidence. After such a trial as we have gone through, and the attention we have paid, it would be ridiculous to suppose that any summing up would be advanced by reading the details of every piece of evidence; far better to point out the issues, and to show the portions of the evidence bearing upon the issues which the jury have to consider. I end as I began. If you are of the opinion that his story of his wife's going away on the 1st February is true, verdict of not guilty. If you are of the opinion that the Crown have not satisfied you that these were Cora Crippen's remains, poisoned by hyoscin, buried and mutilated, verdict of not guilty. But you ought not to hesitate from returning a verdict, if you are satisfied upon the evidence, by any fear, or suggestion, or doubt, as to what might occur in the future. There has

been ample opportunity for getting hold of Cora Crippen if she is really alive. You cannot proceed with the case upon the theory that she is alive unless you believe the defendant's story. You will, of course, as I have said, look to the fact that the Crown have got to prove their case. You will give the benefit of any doubt to the prisoner Crippen; but, if the evidence points to the fact that he, and he alone, is responsible for the death of his wife, Cora Crippen, you will not hesitate to do your duty.

[The jury retired at 2.15, and returned into Court at 2.42.]

The Clerk of the Court—Gentlemen, have you agreed upon your verdict?

The Foreman of the Jury—We have.

The Clerk of the Court—Do you find the prisoner guilty or not guilty of wilful murder?

The Foreman—We find the prisoner guilty of wilful murder.

The Clerk of the Court—And that is the verdict of you all?

The Foreman—Yes.

The Clerk of the Court—Prisoner at the bar, you stand convicted of the crime of wilful murder; have you anything to say why the Court should not give you judgment of death according to law?

The Prisoner—I am innocent.

The Clerk of the Court—Do you wish to say anything?

The Prisoner—I still protest my innocence.

Sentence.

The Usher having proclaimed silence,

The Lord Chief Justice—Hawley Harvey Crippen, you have been convicted, upon evidence, which could leave no doubt on the minds of any reasonable man, that you cruelly poisoned your wife, that you concealed your crime, you mutilated her body, and disposed piece-meal of her remains; you possessed yourself of her property, and used it for your own purposes. It was further established that as soon as suspicion was aroused you fled from justice, and took every measure to conceal your flight. On the ghastly and wicked nature of the crime I will not dwell. I only tell you that you must entertain no expectation or hope that you will escape the consequences of your crime, and I implore you to make your peace with Almighty God. I have now to pass upon you the sentence of the Court, which is that you be taken from hence to a lawful prison, and from thence to a place of execution, and that you be there hanged by the neck until you are dead, and that your body be buried in the precincts of the prison where you shall have last been confined after your conviction. And may the Lord have mercy on your soul!

The Chaplain—Amen.

[The prisoner having been removed, his lordship thanked the jury and discharged them.]

APPENDICES.

Appendix A.

APPENDIX A.

Captain Kendall's Message.

(From the *Daily Mail*, July 31, 1910.)

The man on board the "Montrose," supposed to be Crippen, answers all the descriptions given in the police report, as does also his companion, Miss Le Neve.

I discovered them two hours after leaving Antwerp, but did not telegraph to my owners until I had found out good clues. I conversed with both, and at the same time took keen observations of all points, and felt quite confident as to their identity.

They booked their passage in Brussels as Mr. John Robinson and Master Robinson, and came on board at Antwerp in brown suits, soft grey hats, and white canvas shoes. They had no baggage except a small handbag bought on the Continent. My suspicion was aroused by seeing them on the deck beside a boat. Le Neve squeezed Crippen's hand immoderately. It seemed to me unnatural for two males, so I suspected them at once.

I was well posted as to the crime, so got on the scent at once. I said nothing to the officers till the following morning, when I took my chief officer into my confidence. He then detected the same suspicious circumstances as myself. I warned him that it must be kept absolutely quiet, as it was too good a thing to lose, so we made a lot of them, and kept them smiling.

During lunch I examined both their hats. Crippen's was stamped "Jackson, Boulevard le Nord." Le Neve's hat bore no name, but it was packed round the rim with paper to make it fit. Le Neve has the manner and appearance of a very refined, modest girl. She does not speak much, but always wears a pleasant smile. She seems thoroughly under his thumb, and he will not leave her for a moment. Her suit is anything but a good fit. Her trousers are very tight about the hips, and are split a bit down the back and secured with large safety [redacted]

You will notice I did not arrest them. The course I am pursuing is the best, as they have no suspicion, and, with so many passengers, it prevents any excitement. They have been under strict observation all the voyage, as if they smelt a rat, he might do something rash. I have not noticed a revolver in his hip pocket. He continually shaves his upper lip, and his beard is growing nicely. I often see him stroking it and seeming pleased, looking more like a farmer every day. The mark on the nose caused through wearing spectacles has not worn off since coming on board.

He sits about on the deck reading, or pretending to read, and both seem to be thoroughly enjoying all their meals. They have not been seasick, and I have discussed various parts of the world with him. He knows Toronto, Detroit, and California well, and says he is going to take his boy to California for his health (meaning Miss Le Neve). Has in conversation used several medical terms. Crippen says that when the ship arrives he will go to Detroit by boat, if possible, as he prefers it. The books he has been most interested in have been—

"Pickwick Papers."
"Nebo the Nailer" (S. B. Gould).
"Metropolis."
"A Name to Conjure With."

And he is now busy reading "The Four Just Men," which is all about a murder in London and £1000 reward.

. . . . . .

When my suspicions were aroused as to Crippen's identity I quietly collected all the English papers on the ship which mentioned anything of the murder, and

I warned the chief officer to collect any he might see. This being done, I considered the road was clear. I told Crippen a story to make him laugh heartily, to see if he would open his mouth wide enough for me to ascertain if he had false teeth. This ruse was successful.

All the "boy's" manners at table when I was watching him were most ladylike, handling knife and fork, and taking fruit off dishes with two fingers. Crippen kept cracking nuts for her, and giving her half his salad, and was always paying her the most marked attention.

During the evening of July 25, which they spent in the saloon, enjoying songs and music, he was quite interested, and spoke to me next morning, saying how one song, "We All Walked Into the Shop," had been drumming in his head all night, and how his boy had enjoyed it, and had laughed heartily when they retired to their room. In the course of one conversation he spoke about American drinks, and said that Selfridge's was the only decent place in London to get them at.

On two or three occasions when walking on the deck I called after him by his assumed name, Mr. Robinson, and he took no notice. I repeated it, and it was only owing to the presence of mind of Miss Le Neve that he turned round. He apologised for not hearing me, saying that the cold weather had made him deaf.

One night he did not appear at the concert in the saloon, and he made an apology to me next morning, saying he wanted to come but the young fellow did not feel well, and would not let him come, and he did not like to be left alone. During the day he would often look at the track chart which shows the ship's position, and count the number of days remaining to the end of the passage

He would often sit on deck and look up aloft at the wireless aerial, and listen to the cracking electric spark messages being sent by the Marconi operator. He said, "What a wonderful invention it is!" He said one day that, according to our present rate of steaming, he ought to be in Detroit on Tuesday, August 2.

At times both would sit and appear to be in deep thought. Though Le Neve does not show signs of distress, and is, perhaps, ignorant of the crime committed, she appears to be a girl with a very weak will. She has to follow him everywhere. If he looks at her she gives him an endearing smile, as though she were under his hypnotic influence.

Crippen was very restless on sighting Belle Isle, and asked where we stopped for the pilot, how he came off, how far from the pilot station to Quebec, and said he would be glad when we arrived, as he was anxious to get to Detroit.

I had them both in my room talking over various things connected with the United States, mostly about San Francisco. Crippen says he does not suppose he would know it now, as he had not been there since he was eighteen years of age, but how he loved California, and said he thought of settling down on a nice fruit farm there. Throughout the whole conversation Le Neve never spoke, but gave the usual laugh of response to anything funny, and looked as though she would like to give vent to her feelings. (Signed) KENDALL, Commander.

APPENDIX B.

PUBLISHED STATEMENT OF DR. CRIPPEN.

(From the *Daily Mail*, November 20, 1910.)

"ABOUT my unhappy relations with Belle Elmore I will say nothing. We drifted apart in sympathy; she had her own friends and pleasures, and I was rather a lonely man and rather miserable. Then I obtained the affection and sympathy of Miss Le Neve. I confess that, according to the moral laws of Church and State, we were guilty, and I do not defend our position in that respect. But what I do

Appendix B.

say is that this love was not of a debased and degraded character. It was—if I may say so to people who will not perhaps understand or believe—a good love. She comforted me in my melancholy condition; her mind was beautiful to me; her loyalty and courage and self-sacrifice were of a high character. Whatever sin there was—and we broke the law—it was my sin, not hers . . . .

"In this farewell letter to the world, written as I face eternity, I say that Ethel Le Neve has loved me as few women love men, and that her innocence of any crime, save that of yielding to the dictates of the heart, is absolute. To her I pay this last tribute. It is of her that my last thoughts have been. My last prayer will be that God may protect her and keep her safe from harm, and allow her to join me in eternity.

"Surely such love as hers for me will be rewarded. However vile I am, whatever faults I may have committed, surely a woman whose love has been beyond all womanly loyalty, who though the world has condemned me believes in my innocence; who, though I am scorned by men, holds true to her love and is faithful to the last, has a virtue of love which may not be denounced by men who have not been so happy as I have been, or by women whose hearts are not big enough for such devotion. Remember that she has faced the agonies and tortures of being charged with murder, of enduring a long imprisonment, of facing a terrible prosecution before her acquittal. Yet she still loves me. Never once has she turned against me for all that unwillingly I have made her bear. Is not that a wonderful woman's love?

"Facing my Maker, very close to the hour of my death, I give my testimony to the absolute innocence of Ethel Le Neve. She put her trust in me, and what I asked her to do she did, never doubting. When I asked her to fly with me because of the scandal that would follow the discovery of Belle Elmore's disappearance, she believed the words I spoke, and said she would go with me and face whatever discomforts might follow. When I suggested the boy's disguise she adopted it with a girlish sense of amusement over which there was no shadow of guilt. Poor child! Why should she feel guilty? She had been overwhelmed with surprise to hear that Belle Elmore was still alive. But she had forgotten my first and only deception—the story of the cablegrams announcing Belle Elmore's death.

"Her only idea was that we were getting away to a new world and a new life, away from prying eyes and gossiping tongues. She was willing to adventure all for that, and she still trusted me. I believe she has told in full detail the story of her adventures in boy's clothes, and although I have not been permitted to read a line of her narrative, I know that every word is true, for she has the heart of truth. I feel sure also that she has said no unkind word about me. . . .

"I make this defence and this acknowledgment—that the love of Ethel Le Neve has been the best thing in my life—my only happiness—and that in return for that great gift I have been inspired with a greater kindness towards my fellow-beings, and with a greater desire to do good. We were as man and wife together, with an absolute communion of spirit. Perhaps God will pardon us because we were like two children in the great unkind world, who clung to one another and gave each other courage.

"In Rotterdam and Brussels, and during the voyage across the Atlantic on the 'Montrose,' Ethel had no suspicion of the tragedy that awaited her. Always she was hopeful of the future and full of expectation of the adventures to come. Then as a bolt from the blue came the arrival of Inspector Dew, with the appalling charges made against us both, followed by our dreadful separation.

"The world knows what happened afterwards; but what it does not know is the agony we both suffered, the frightful torture of two hearts beating one for another, yet divided by the most cruel barriers."

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

APPENDIX C.

Letter from Dr. Crippen to Ethel Le Neve.

(From the *Daily Mail*, 27th November 1910.)

Nov. 22.

How can I find the strength and heart to struggle through this last letter? God indeed must hear our cry to Him for Divine help in this last farewell.

How to control myself to write I hardly know, but pray God help us to be brave to help to face the end now so near.

The thoughts rush to my mind quicker than I can put them down. Time is so short now, and there is so much that I would say.

There are less than two days left to us. Only one more letter after this can I write you, and only two more visits—one to-night before you read this letter, and one to-morrow.

When I wrote to you on Saturday I had not heard any news of the petition, and though I never at any time had hope, yet deep down in my heart was just a glimmer of trust that God might give us yet a chance to put me right before the world and let me have the passionate longing of my soul.

Your letter, written early Saturday, came to me last Saturday evening, and soon after the Governor brought me the dreadful news about ten o'clock.

He was so kind and considerate in telling me, in breaking the shock as gently as he could. He was most kind, and left me at last with 'God bless you! Good night,' so that I know you will ever remember him most kindly.

When he had gone I first kissed your face in the photo, my faithful, devoted companion in all this sorrow.

Oh, how glad I am I had the photo. It was some consolation, although in spite of all my greatest efforts it was impossible to keep down a great sob and my heart's agonised cry.

How am I to endure to take my last look at your dear face? What agony must I go through at the last when you disappear for ever from my eyes! God help us to be brave then.

When I received your letter on Sunday evening I saw that you did not then know the bad news, and I prayed God to help you in the morning when you did learn it. I know what your agony will be, for I know your heart, like mine, will be broken. God help us indeed to be brave.

That is my constant prayer, now that the last refuge to which we had looked with some hope has fled. I am comforted at least in thinking that through all the years of our friendship never have I passed one unkind word or given one reproachful look to her to whom I have given myself entirely for ever.

I think all our necessary points about business are settled: but there are one or two things I want to say. If by any possibility you can have my body, have it cremated, and dispose of the ashes as you wish. I know you will be the only one to mourn for me, which I know will please you; but do not, dearest, think I expect you to put on mourning; that, my dearest, I leave you to decide on. It may not be well for you to do it in going to Mrs. H., and I know that not even the deepest of mourning will be more than a faint indication of your grief.

You have friends to help you. You have at least sufficient means to begin the battle of life not destitute nor helpless. How shameful to be hounded in our last moments secured to us by newspaper men, and that they should continue to publish lies.*

The Governor was so kind as to let me read yesterday afternoon your story and my statement. I am indeed thankful to have been permitted to do so at the last.

I find though that in some way they have omitted that part entirely in which

* This refers to an alleged (and fraudulent) "confession" published by a certain paper.

Appendix C.

I criticised the Crown's evidence on the scar, and on the absence of a navel. My criticism on this point was important, and I hope you can get it put in next Sunday.

You will remember that the case for the Crown depended on the identity which they tried to prove by means of the so-called scar on the piece of flesh and skin, 7 inches by 6 inches. Now, on this piece of skin were found two grooves, one as distinctly marked as the other. The medical witness of the Crown made no assertion with regard to this piece of skin until they were told that Belle Elmore had had an operation.

Then they suddenly discovered one groove to be a scar, although admitting the other groove to be caused by a fold of the skin which had been under great pressure, notwithstanding the undoubted fact that one groove was absolutely continuous with the other in a curved line.

The medical witnesses for my defence brought forward proof to support their denial that the groove was a scar by demonstrating that there were certain structures present in the so-called scar which could not be present if the mark had resulted from an operation.

This proof showed so absolutely that the groove was not a scar of an operation that the Crown could only squirm out of their false position by bringing forward at the last moment a theory that the presence of these certain structures was to be accounted for by the supposition that the edges of the skin had been turned under and brought together in sewing up the wound of the operation—a most unlikely thing to have been done by skilled surgeons, who specially avoid such an occurrence in abdominal operations.

Another point, advanced again at the last moment by the Crown when they saw their case weakening with regard to the so-called scar, was the fact that the groove was widest at its lowest point, just above the pubic bone. This fact was emphasised by the Crown's witness as being distinctive of a stretched abdominal scar, but for the defence this was denied, the fact being that, anatomically considered, the tendinous or fibrous attachments of the abdomen are actually firmest at their attachments to the pubic bone, and if the groove had been a stretched scar its widest point would have been much higher up.

Yet despite the fact having been annulled by my medical witnesses, the judge dwelt upon this point as of advantage for the Crown.

Finally, at Bow Street the Crown's witness accounted for the entire absence of the navel by stating that it had been cut out during the operation, but when another Crown witness insisted that she had seen the navel on Belle Elmore's abdomen, any reference to this having been cut out was most carefully avoided at the Old Bailey.

Now, it is plain to every one that if there exists a navel on Belle Elmore's abdomen, the fact that no navel was found on that piece of skin above the so-called scar is proof beyond any possible doubt that the remains found at Hilldrop Crescent were not those of B. E.

Yet the judge told the jury to accept the statement of the witness that she saw the scar, and to disregard the statement that she saw the navel.

I write these things in the hope that the unreliability of the case brought against me may be understood by thoughtful people. But I want you not to go to any further trouble or expense in trying to get further evidence beyond completing what correspondence you have begun with medical men here, and with the hospital in Philadelphia.

I want my dear one to keep for her own use all that can be realised by the sale of my estate. We can safely leave to the hand of a just God the production later on, if necessary, of further evidence.

I hope so greatly that you have heard favourably from Mrs. H., and that you may soon go to her, where you will be comfortable and made more cheerful by the bright sunshine, and be free entirely from the newspaper men and their lying tales.

I feel sure my troubles and worries here will soon be ended, as I shall be to-morrow in God's hands, and I have perfect faith. He will let my spirit be with you always, and after this earthly separation is finished will join our souls for ever.

There will be no time for letters Wednesday morning.

The rest of this letter shall be sacred to you and me. . . .

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

APPENDIX D.

The Trial of Miss Le Neve at the Old Bailey,

On Tuesday, 25th October, 1910.

The trial of Ethel Le Neve on the charge of being an accessory after the fact in the murder of Cora Crippen at 39 Hilldrop Crescent, for which Hawley Harvey Crippen was sentenced to death, took place at the Central Criminal Court before the Lord Chief Justice of England.

Counsel in the case were—Mr. R. D. Muir, Mr. Travers Humphreys, and Mr. S. Ingleby Oddie, for the Crown; and F. E. Smith, K.C., M.P., and Mr. Barrington Ward, for the defence.

Mr. R. D. Muir, in opening for the Crown, said—The prisoner is a typist by occupation, some twenty-seven years of age. She is charged in this indictment, in effect, with assisting Hawley Harvey Crippen to escape from justice at a time when she knew that he had been guilty of the murder of his wife. The facts of the case are for the most part undisputed. My learned friend, Mr. F. E. Smith, does not rest any part of his case upon there having been no murder committed, or upon any question with regard to Crippen having committed the murder, or the murdered person being Crippen's wife. Therefore the great part of this case rests upon undisputed facts. The issue to which the evidence for the prosecution will be directed will be—what was the state of knowledge that prisoner had, and what was her intention with regard to the acts which she undoubtedly committed? Guilty knowledge and guilty intent are issues in this case, and upon such issues a jury can rarely have direct evidence at all. It hardly ever happens that the state of a person's mind can be judged by anything but that person's actions, and, therefore, you will look at the facts in this case with a view to discovering what was the knowledge of the prisoner at the time that the acts in question were done, and what was her intention with regard to the acts which she herself did. Bearing in mind that that is the real issue to which you must direct your attention, I will state very shortly the facts.

Crippen, an American citizen, was carrying on business in this country in a quasi-medical capacity. He was in 1909 and 1910 either manager to, or agent for, a firm of patent medicine vendors called Munyons, and their business was carried on at Albion House, New Oxford Street. His wife had been on the music-hall stage, and was known by the name of Belle Elmore among her friends. They were living together at one time on perfectly good terms. They had been putting money in the bank, and there was about £600 on deposit either in their joint names or in Belle Elmore's name at the Charing Cross Bank in December, 1909. There seems to have been a change in their financial position about that time, because notice had been given to withdraw the £600 in the bank, and it is quite clear that at the end of January and the beginning of February Crippen had got into monetary difficulties, and was in urgent need of money.

Crippen had been carrying on an intrigue with the prisoner Le Neve extending over some three years or so. She was a typist in his employment, or in the employment of the firm for which he worked, she being a woman ten years younger than Crippen's wife. It is quite clear that the prisoner was the motive for the murder by Crippen of his wife. It was for the prisoner that he committed that murder, in order that he might possess himself of her to a greater extent than he had been able to do up till then, and in order also that he might possess himself of his wife's property and money, and be able to keep the prisoner.

Gentlemen, you will have to be satisfied—and I submit there will be no difficulty on that point—that Crippen, in fact, murdered his wife. They had been living together at 39 Hilldrop Crescent for some four and a quarter years in January of this year. They had a dinner party on 31st January, to which they invited

two friends, Mr. and Mrs. Martinetti, and the party lasted till half-past one the following morning. The husband and wife were apparently on the best possible terms when Mr. and Mrs. Martinetti left. Cora Crippen was never seen alive by any person outside the house after that day. Crippen and she were left alone in the house, and the next that was found of Mrs. Crippen was that on 13th July her remains were dug up in the cellar of that house, mutilated beyond recognition by any ordinary means—mutilated with a skill which indicated that the person who had done it was trained in anatomy. It was found upon analysis of the organs remaining that she had died of hyoscine poisoning. On 19th January, a fortnight or so before his wife disappeared, Crippen had purchased an enormous quantity, five grains, of that deadly poison. Upon these facts being proved simply to you, and those facts being undisputed, the question then arises as to the prisoner's knowledge of that matter.

For about three years Le Neve had been connected with Crippen in an intimate way, meeting him in the daytime, but always going home at night to her lodgings with a Mrs. Jackson, in Camden Town. She had lodged with Mrs. Jackson from September, 1908, until March, 1910, and there can be no question that as between Mrs. Jackson and prisoner there was real affection, and that the prisoner looked to Mrs. Jackson as a daughter would look to a mother, and Mrs. Jackson as a mother would look to a daughter. That is a very important fact when you are considering Mrs. Jackson's evidence. Mrs. Jackson says that about January last prisoner began to look ill and troubled, and that one night towards the end of January, or in the beginning of February—she did not fix any date—prisoner came home very ill. She would take no supper, and went to bed. Her appearance, according to Mrs. Jackson's description, was the appearance of somebody who had suffered a great shock, who was stricken with horror at something that had happened. Prisoner was asked for an explanation, but little or none was forthcoming that night. The next morning, again, this young woman was in the same condition. She was practically unable to eat her breakfast, and her condition was such that Mrs. Jackson saw she was quite unfit to go to her work as a typist, and persuaded her to remain at home.

That was no ordinary illness. It was something which seemed to strike the prisoner with horror. Whatever it may have been, it was contemporaneous, or nearly contemporaneous, with the murder of Mrs. Crippen. That is a fact which cannot be disputed. She was pressed to explain in the course of that day, and she gave one or more explanations. One was that she felt her position in regard to Crippen while Mrs. Crippen was the lawful wife, and that she could not bear to see Mrs. Crippen in lawful possession of the man for whom the prisoner had this affection. If that were the true explanation it would fix the date of this extraordinary fit of horror at a time when Mrs. Crippen was alive. It speaks of Mrs. Crippen as if she were then alive; but you will have to consider whether it is a true explanation or an adequate explanation of the state of the prisoner on the night and the morning of which Mrs. Jackson speaks. The explanation, so-called, of this extraordinary state of horror was one which would have applied to any day of the preceding three years on which no such state of horror existed, so far as the prisoner is concerned. You will have to ask yourselves whether the true explanation of that state of horror was that the knowledge had come to her in some way or other that Crippen had murdered his wife, and that no explanation such as she offered could explain such a state of things, because the explanation refers to a state of things which had existed continuously for some three years.

Almost immediately after that another change takes place. The prisoner becomes cheerful. She says that "the doctor" has promised to marry her. She comes home wearing Mrs. Crippen's clothes and jewels, and makes presents to Mrs. Jackson of enormous quantities of the clothing that Mrs. Crippen had left behind her. She says that Mrs. Crippen has gone to America, and she and Crippen visit Mrs. Jackson on more than one occasion. She also had the knowledge that Crippen for a large sum of money had been pawning some of Mrs. Crippen's jewellery. You must ask yourselves, "What is the explanation of this?" Is it likely that any woman would suppose that the wife was going away from the husband leaving behind her furs, jewels, and everything practically that she had in the world, to be worn by any woman to whom Crippen liked to give them? Is that a story which, in your judgment as men of the world, any woman would be

likely to believe? That is the story which the prisoner put forward as the one which she believed as explaining the absence of Mrs. Crippen. You must apply your common sense and knowledge of the world to that, and say whether that is an explanation which, in your judgment, any woman would believe.

According to prisoner, Crippen never told her, so far as she could remember, whether Mrs. Crippen was coming back or not. But immediately she began to wear Mrs. Crippen's jewels and go out in public in them—wearing the brooch at a dinner and ball of the Music Hall Artistes' Benevolent Fund, a place where all Mrs. Crippen's friends would be gathered together. You will have to ask yourselves whether there was not in her mind such knowledge that Mrs. Crippen would never come back as this indictment imputes to her, otherwise she never would have gone about with Mrs. Crippen's husband, wear Mrs. Crippen's clothes and jewels, and give away some of Mrs. Crippen's clothing to friends.

On 12th March she left her lodgings to take up her residence with Crippen at the house in Hilldrop Crescent; on 24th March she went with Crippen to Dieppe, and on 30th March she returned. It was then, she says, that she first learned that Mrs. Crippen was dead, although up to this date and after she had been acting as if there was no such person in the world. The friends of Mrs. Crippen were making inquiries. The stories Crippen told to account for his wife's disappearance were untrue, and they had found them untrue. Inspector Dew went to Hilldrop Crescent on 8th July and found the prisoner in possession. He said he had come to make inquiries about Crippen's missing wife. The prisoner, after some show of reluctance, took him to Albion House, where, after an interview had taken pace between Crippen and the inspector, prisoner made a short statement to the inspector. It is the only account prisoner has ever given of her connection with Dr. Crippen, or with his subsequent flight. She says: "I am a single woman, twenty-seven years of age, and am a shorthand typist. My father and mother reside at 17b Goldington Buildings, Great College Street, Camden Town. My father is a commercial traveller. Since the latter end of February I have been living at 30 Hilldrop Crescent with Dr. Crippen as his wife. Before this I lived at 30 Constantine Road, Hampstead. I have been on intimate terms with Mr. Crippen for two or three years, but I have known him for ten years. I made his acquaintance by being in the same employ as he was. I know Mrs. Crippen, and have visited Hilldrop Crescent. She treated me as a friend.

"In the early part of February I received a note from Mr. Crippen saying Mrs. Crippen had gone to America, and asking me to hand over a packet he enclosed to Miss May. About four p.m. the same day he came to our business place, Albion House, and told me his wife had gone to America. He said she had packed up and gone. I had been in the habit for the past two or three years of going about with him, and continued doing so.

"About a week after she had told me she had gone to America I went to Hilldrop Crescent to put the place straight, as there were no servants kept, but at night I went to my lodgings. I did this daily for about a fortnight. The place appeared to be all right, and quite as usual. He took me to the Benevolent Fund dinner, and lent me a diamond brooch to wear. Later on he told me I could keep it.

"After this he told me she had caught a chill on board the ship and had got pneumonia. Afterwards he told me she was dead. He told me he could not go to the funeral as it was too far, and she would have been buried before he got there. Before he ever told me this I had been away with him for five or six days at Dieppe, and stayed at an hotel with him in the names of Mr. and Mrs. Crippen. When we came back he took me to Hilldrop Crescent, and I remained there with him. The same night, or the night after, he told me that Belle was dead. I was very much astonished, but I do not think I said anything to him about it. I have not had any conversation with him about it since. He gave me some furs of his wife to wear, and I have been living with him ever since as his wife. My father and mother do not know what I am doing, and think I am a housekeeper at Hilldrop Crescent. When Mr. Crippen told me his wife had gone to America I don't remember if he told me she was coming back or not. I cannot remember if he went into mourning."

That statement was made on 8th July, and next morning Crippen came to the office and gave instructions to a man named Long to buy a quantity of boy's

clothing. Long afterwards found that the boy's clothes had been taken away from the place where he had left them by Crippen's orders, and that a hat, which he recognised as having been worn by prisoner at some time, was left in the office. The police went to Hilldrop Crescent and found that Crippen and prisoner had disappeared. On 13th July the human remains were found in the cellar, and a hue and cry were at once set up.

It is plain beyond dispute from the facts that I am about to state that Crippen and prisoner were flying from justice. They went to Antwerp, and there they left for Canada on 20th July by the "Montrose." Between 9th July—and certainly between 15th and 20th July—the newspapers were full of descriptions both of Crippen and the prisoner, and their photographs. It is incredible that accused should not have had the curiosity to look at the English papers at Antwerp and have seen that there has a hue and cry after Crippen and herself. They booked on the "Montrose" under false names, and disguised. What could have induced the prisoner to take those steps on and after 9th July? What was it the prisoner knew which induced her to cut off her hair and masquerade as a boy, and condemn herself practically to perpetual silence, because she dare not speak in public in the hearing of any person lest her voice should betray her? The explanation which lies on the surface of those facts is that the prisoner knew that Crippen was flying from justice for the murder of his wife. What other explanation is there? Absolutely none. When the prisoner was charged on board the "Montrose" with being a party to wilful murder she became faint and made no reply to the charge. She also said she had neither seen nor knew anything about the letter of appeal from her father, published in the newspapers.

Prisoners were brought back on the "Megantic," and while on that vessel Le Neve was charged with murder and also with being an accessory after the fact. All she said then was "Yes," indicating that she knew what the nature of the charges was. Again, at Bow Street Police Station she made no reply, and before being committed by the magistrate for trial upon the present charge she was given the opportunity of going into the witness box, and again made no answer at all. Gentlemen, is there any explanation which she can offer, except that she was flying from justice with Crippen? If there is any other explanation, why has it not beeen put forward? It is useless to speculate whether she, being a woman, may not have accompanied this man for some other reason Can she, the person who knows whether such an explanation exists, choose to let opportunity after opportunity go by and leave the facts unexplained altogether?

You are left now with the plain explanation lying on the surface of those facts, and nothing else. Crippen was flying from justice accompanied by the prisoner at the bar, she assisting him to evade pursuit by disguising herself. For some reason—it matters not what—it was decided that Crippen was not to fly alone, and she being a source of danger to him unless she disguised herself, she made the sacrifices involved. She cut off her hair, dressed as a boy, and passed as his son, with a false name, flying to a foreign country by a circuitous route. All these things for what reason? For no reason that she offers at all, and I submit that, unless and until you get from her, or from somebody else, some explanation, the only interpretation you can put upon these acts is the interpretation that she knew of Crippen's crime and she assisted Crippen to escape.

Evidence for the Prosecution.

Mr. Frederick Lowndes, examined by Mr. Humphreys—I am the owner of the house at 39 Hilldrop Crescent. Crippen was tenant of that house from September, 1905, to July, 1910. I knew Mrs. Crippen, who was living in the same house with her husband, but I did not know the prisoner.

Dr. J. H. Burroughs, examined by Mr. Humphreys—I am a registered medical practitioner at 169 City Road. I have known Mrs. Crippen since 1902. I last saw her on a Wednesday early in January. I also know Mrs. Martinetti. I have attended her professionally. I saw her last night. She is suffering from influenza, with high temperature, and is quite unable to attend here this morning. She has been ill since last Tuesday, the day when she gave evidence in this case. The first I heard about Mrs. Crippen was that she was dead. I also heard at the same time that she had gone away, and that she had died abroad.

Chief Inspector Dew, examined by Mr. Humphreys—I was at Bow Street Police Court when Mrs. Martinetti gave evidence. She afterwards signed the depositions, and I now identify her signature.

Mr. Humphreys then read extracts from the depositions in question bearing on the present case, including mention of the dinner party at Hilldrop Crescent on 31st January; also the statement of Mrs. Martinetti that on 20th February she saw prisoner wearing a brooch which she believed Mrs. Crippen had worn.

Mr. Smith next read the material passages from the cross-examination of Mrs. Martinetti, as follows:—"At the ball I did not speak to Miss Le Neve. Afterwards we sat at the same table, with Dr. Crippen between us. Other friends at the gathering knew her quite well. Miss Le Neve, I thought, was very quiet. At the dinner I did not see her much. The brooch she was wearing she wore without any attempt at concealment. Miss Le Neve would naturally expect to meet many of Mrs. Crippen's friends at the dinner."

Miss Melinda May, examined by Mr. Humphreys—I am secretary of the Music Hall Ladies' Guild. Meetings of the committee were held every Wednesday at Albion House. Mrs. Crippen was a member of the guild. Belle Elmore was present at the meeting on 26th January. The next meeting was on 2nd February. She was not then present. On that day the prisoner came to me and gave me the pass-book, cheque book, and the paying-in book in an open envelope. She also gave me two letters. (Shown a quantity of jewellery, a brooch, a pair of earrings, and six rings.) I have seen Belle Elmore wearing similar jewellery.

Cross-examined by Mr. Smith—Did you hear that Belle Elmore had gone to America and had died?—Yes.
Was there talk about getting a wreath?—Yes.
You were in favour of sending a wreath?—Yes.
Then you accepted the statement that she was dead?—Yes.

Inspector Dew (recalled), examined by Mr. Humphreys—Mr. Nash called at Scotland Yard on June 30, and from that date inquiries were made with a view to tracing Mrs. Crippen. On 8th July I went to Hilldrop Crescent. I asked for Dr. Crippen. The French maid opened the door and sent Miss Le Neve. I told her I wanted to see Dr. Crippen, and she told me he was not in. I told her I was Inspector Dew, and asked who she was, and she said she was the housekeeper. I asked if she were not Miss Le Neve, and she said she was. I told her I wanted to see Dr. Crippen in regard to Mrs. Crippen's disappearance, and she said she would telephone to the doctor. After some demur she agreed to come with me to Albion House. She there made a statement, which was taken down and read over to her. She then signed it. (Mr. Humphreys read the statement, which is given in Mr. Muir's opening speech.) Miss Le Neve, Dr. Crippen, Sergeant Mitchell, and I went to Hilldrop Crescent. Miss Le Neve remained in the kitchen while we went round the house. Except that some things were packed up, the place was in perfect order. While in the house Dr. Crippen showed me some jewellery. Dr. Crippen had a rather heavy moustache. He was wearing gold-rimmed glasses. The next day I circulated a description of Mrs. Crippen. On 11th July I went to Albion House, but failed to see Dr. Crippen. I then went to Hilldrop Crescent, and as I did not find him there I circulated descriptions of Dr. Crippen and Miss Le Neve. These descriptions were circulated all over the world. On 13th July I went to Hilldrop Crescent again. On digging up the floor of the cellar I came on the human remains. I sent for Dr. Marshall. The remains were left there that night, and the next day were removed to the mortuary. I found some clothes in the house. They were in three baskets and a box. I identify the furs which are produced. I also found a box under the bed in one of the rooms, containing two suits of pyjamas and a single pair of pyjama trousers. I also identify Dr. Crippen's medical degree which I found. Warrants were issued on 16th July. Subsequently I received certain information, and went to Canada. On 31st July I boarded the "Montrose," and arrested Dr. Crippen. He had

shaved his moustache and had discarded glasses. I then went into cabin No. 5 and saw Miss Le Neve. She was dressed in a brown suit of boy's clothes. I said to her "Miss Le Neve?" and she replied "Yes." I told her that she would be arrested and charged with Dr. Crippen with the murder and mutilation of Mrs. Crippen. She made no reply. Before reading the warrant to her I cautioned her. When told the charge she became faint. I then went back to Dr. Crippen, and when he was searched we found upon him two cards and the articles of jewellery which he had shown me on 8th July at Hilldrop Crescent. Cabin No. 5 was also occupied by Dr. Crippen. They went under the names of "John Philo Robinson" and "John Robinson." I was present when the captain spoke to Miss Le Neve. He said he would do all he could for her. He asked, "Have you not seen the letter from your father in the papers?" She said "No. I have not seen any papers since I left London. I know nothing about it. If I had known anything about it I should have communicated at once." Later on she said, "I assure you, Mr. Dew, I know nothing about it. I intended to write to my sister when I got to Quebec." On 21st August I again read the warrant to her, and she replied "Yes." When the charge was read over at the police station she made no reply. The warrant charged her with murder as well as with aiding and abetting.

Cross-examined by Mr. Smith—Have you inquired about her past life?—Yes. For ten years she has been a shorthand typist. I understand that she has not been living with her father and mother for some years.

What is her father's position in life?—He is of the lower middle class. He is a canvasser for coal orders.

You know he wrote some articles for a paper called *Answers*?—He did, but I did not read them. On 8th July the prisoner showed me all over the house. She volunteered the suggestion that I should go over the house and see if Dr. Crippen were there. I accepted her word that Dr. Crippen was not there.

How was the statement at Albion House made? Did you ask her questions?—On some points, and her answers were incorporated in her own words. I supplemented her statement in this way. It was a very lucid statement. Dr. Crippen told me that the prisoner knew nothing about it. He said, "It is only fair to say that she knows nothing about it. I never told her anything." After my conversation with Dr. Crippen in July I circulated a description of Mrs. Crippen. I knew the state of the wardrobe which she left behind. Although I knew that she had not carried any of her clothes and jewellery away, I circulated this description. I circulated the description as that of a missing person. Dr. Crippen told me she had taken some jewellery and a basket of clothes.

How did you circulate the description?—We do it consequently. We send it round to all the metropolitan police stations, so that the attention of every constable is drawn to it. Frequently we get information that way. We do not send them by post. We have a system of our own. We send them by cart to the head stations and they are then circulated. The "Montrose" left Antwerp on 20th July.

Dr. Augustus Joseph Pepper, examined by Mr. Muir—I am a Master in Surgery at the London University and a Fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons. I was called to 39 Hilldrop Crescent, some remains having been found there. In addition to the remains there were some Hinde's curlers, a woman's undervest, and a piece of a pyjama jacket. I found all the organs, except those of sex. I examined the organs to see if there was any natural cause of death, but could find none. The head, arms, legs, and bones had been taken away. I found amongst the pieces of flesh a piece with a scar on it such as I have frequently seen. The remains and the articles found were put in jars and sealed up. I found that the hair had been bleached. The remains were those of an adult person in middle life and rather stout. I should think the length of time they had been in the ground would be between four and eight months. The organs of the chest had been removed in one piece, attached one to the other as they would be in the body. That indicated considerable skill on the part of the person who removed them.

Mr. Harold Kirby, examined by Mr. Muir—I am an assistant of Messrs. Lewis & Burrows, and I knew Dr. Crippen as a customer of the firm. On 19th

January Dr. Crippen purchased five grains of hyoscine hydrobromide. He had never or since purchased hyoscine. He signed the poisons register, stating that he required the hyoscine for homœpathic purposes. Never since I have been with the firm have they stocked such a large quantity of hyoscine.

Dr. Willcox, examined by Mr. Oddie—I am senior analyst to the Home Office. I examined the viscera, hair, under-vest, and piece of pyjama jacket found in the cellar. I saw a piece of flesh with a scar on it. I examined the organs for poison and I found hyoscine. A quarter to hal. a grain would be a poisonous dose. In my opinion, death was caused by hyoscine poisoning. After the drug was administered death would take place probably within twelve hours, without any recovery. It had been administered by the mouth. It is rather bitter in taste, and it must be taken in something with a pronounced flavour, such as beer, coffee, or sweet tea. (a jar was produced. from which witness took the piece of pyjama jacket which was found with the remains.) This piece of pyjama jacket is similar to the single pair of pyjama trousers.

Mrs. Emily Jackson, examined by Mr. Humphreys—I am Miss Le Neve's landlady. Miss Le Neve came to live with me at Constantine Road, Hampstead, in September, 1908, and, except for a break between March and August, 1909, stayed at that address until 12th March, 1910. She had a bed-sittingroom. I used frequently to go up to Miss Le Neve's bedroom and talk to her there. During the latter part of January I observed that there was something strange about Miss Le Neve's manner. She became very miserable and depressed. Upon one occasion in the latter part of January Miss Le Neve came home looking very tired and strange. She was greatly agitated and went to bed without supper. I went into the bedroom after her. I could see that her whole body was trembling, and that she was in a terrible state. I asked her what was the matter, but she did not seem to have strength to speak. I asked her again, and she said she would be all right in the morning. She lay down in her bed and I sat beside her awhile, and finally left her when I thought she was asleep. That was about two o'clock in the morning. Next morning, between eight and nine, I took her a cup of tea. The next time I saw her was after nine o'clock. She was then dressed to go out to business. She had only eaten a sandwich. She tried to eat but she could not. She appeared very ill and was trembling. She picked up a cup of tea and tried to drink it, but could not. I said to her, "I can't let you go to Albion House like this. There is something the matter with you. I will d tell them you are unfit to go to business to-day." She said, "You will r. the doctor, won't you?" I rang up Albion House, and then went back Le Neve and said to her that she must tell me what was the matter. I s d to her that I was sure there was something dreadful on her mind, and that she did not relieve her mind she would go absolutely mad. She said, "I will tell you the whole story presently." A little while afterwards she said, "Would you be surprised if I told you it is the doctor?" I said, "What do you mean; do you mean he was the cause of your trouble when I first saw you?" She said "Yes." I said, "Why worry about that; it is past and gone?" She burst into tears again, and said, "It is Miss Elmore." Up to that time I had never heard the name of Miss Elmore in my life. I wondered what she meant, and asked her, and she said, "She is his wife, you know. When I see them go away together it makes me realise what my position is." I said, "My dear girl, what is the use of worrying about another woman's husband?" and she said, "She has been threatening to go away with another man, and that is all we are waiting for, and when she does that the doctor is going to divorce her and marry me." I said, "Are you sure he will marry you? It seems to me that it is most unfair what he is asking." I said to her when she spoke of realising her position, "Why don't you tell him what you have told me as regards position." She said she would, and she afterwards informed me she had told the doctor, and that he had said he was very glad she had done so. I don't think she referred again to her illness and agitation. From August, 1909, Miss Le Neve came home regularly, excepting when she spent the week-end away with her sister. She began to stay away in the early part of February. It would be about the second week. She only came home in the mornings. She came home about a week after the illness looking very happy, and said somebody had gone away at last. That was before she began to

Appendix D.

stay out at night. She said she had been at Hilldrop Crescent searching for a bank book. In the course of the search certain jewellery had been found, some of which had been sold by Crippen, and the money put into his business. I received a number of articles of clothing from prisoner. Miss Le Neve first began to bring clothing to me during February, and continued to bring me articles till the time she left. The articles included a fur coat, a black feather boa, a long green coat, a long brown coat, a long black coat, blouses, skirts, nightgowns, hats, stockings, &c. The things were brought in cardboard boxes, excepting on one occasion, when Miss Le Neve came with Crippen and brought some things in a dress basket. Miss Le Neve left my house on 12th March. I visited her at Hilldrop Crescent.

Cross-examined by Mr. SMITH—I became very intimate with Miss Le Neve, and we were on quite different terms from the ordinary lodger and landlady. Miss Le Neve called me "mother." The ordinary routine of the evening was that Miss Le Neve came home at six o'clock, had tea with me and my husband, sat with us till nine, and then we all had supper.

By long and frequent conversations with her you acquired an intimate knowledge of her?—Yes.

Did she seem to you to be of a gentle and retiring nature?—Yes. She was lovable and affectionate to me always.

Her character generally was sympathetic and kind?—So far as I know.

And you saw a great deal of her?—Yes. Miss Le Neve suffered from neuralgia and anæmia, and on several occasions was unable to go down to business. She suffered at irregular intervals considerable pain and weakness.

When you give us dates it is a matter of guesswork?—I cannot fix dates.

You did not try to recollect any of these dates till July? You did not attach much importance to them?—I never gave them another thought.

When the police came in July you began to think of them?—Yes.

You had read, naturally, every word of the Crippen case?—I had not. I was overwhelmed by it. I had not finished reading the paper when the police came. I could not read it. It seemed too horrible.

You had mastered the fact that there had been a disappearance, and that remains were found in the cellar?—Yes.

Also that Belle Elmore had not been seen by any one alive since 1st February?—Yes.

When the police came you began to try to recall what you could of your conversations with Miss Le Neve?—Yes.

[illegible] saw you on behalf of the police?—Sergeant Cornish.

Did he ask you whether you had ever seen anything strange in her manner about the end of January?—I hardly remember. He asked me whether I had seen anything strange about her manner.

Are you prepared to tell us now, definitely, that this strangeness of manner which you have described did not extend to the whole of January?—I do not think she became strange till the early part.

I suppose you mean the 5th, 6th, 7th, and that kind of thing?—Something like that.

From 5th, 6th, and 7th January you began to notice something queer?—She began to be miserable and unhappy.

Did that, as far as you can recollect, react at all on her physical health?—It made her look very ill.

So that I may take it that almost the whole of January she was depressed and looked very ill. Did you notice anything about her eyes?—They were strange and very haggard.

The same kind of look as you saw on the occasion which you have described her as being very ill?—Yes.

Did you ask her, before that conversation you have described, what was the matter?—Yes.

A dozen times?—Quite a dozen.

What did she say?—That she was worried with the accounts in the office.

For all you know she may have been?—Yes.

How did you fix the date of this occasion on which you say she was very ill? You told my learned friend it was during January—towards the latter part. Would

you be prepared to say on oath that it may have been as far back as 25th January?—I could not fix a date.

The Lord Chief Justice—It may have been as early as that?—It may.

Cross-examination continued—You have stated that she came home one night more "pleasant" than you had seen her and said that somebody had gone to America. If it is correct that she came back and said this at the beginning of February, it would suggest the other conversation when she was so agitated would be about 25th January?—Somewhere about that.

You mean she was in high spirits at the beginning of February when you say she came back "pleasant"?—Yes.

No trace of anxiety, no depression, no sign of physical ill-health?—No.

She seemed a really happy woman, and by way of a joke you asked her if some one had died and left her money?—Yes.

And she replied that some one had gone to America?—Yes.

Did you know what she meant?—She had told me previously that was what she was waiting for.

You knew that Crippen had told her his wife had been threatening to go, and it did not surprise you very much?—No.

There was no doubt in your mind that she was genuinely relieved?—No.

You will not in any way bind yourself to a date?—No.

Formal evidence was given as to the pawning of jewellery by Crippen, and his insertion of the advertisement in the *Era* of Belle Elmore's death.

William Long, who was Crippen's dental mechanic, repeated the evidence he gave at the Crippen trial as to purchasing, by Crippen's orders, a boy's suit, tie, shirts, &c.

In reply to Mr. Smith, witness said he had known Miss Le Neve for nine years. She was a gentle and inoffensive girl.

This concluded the case for the Crown.

Mr F. E. Smith announced that he did not propose to call any evidence for the defence.

Closing Speech for the Crown.

Mr. Muir addressed the jury on behalf of the Crown. He said—I stated the facts of this case to you so short a time ago, and the evidence has occupied so short a space, that it will be quite unnecessary for me to repeat them, except in the most summary fashion. There is, first of all, the three years' intrigue between the prisoner at the bar and Crippen, the murderer, culminating in January, or the early part of February, so far as Le Neve is concerned, in the remarkable scene in her bedroom, as described by Mrs. Jackson. Mrs. Jackson did not, and could not, fix a date; but is it not plain that about the time this murder was unquestionably committed, namely, somewhere near the early morning of 1st February, this remarkable attack of horror and prostration seized the prisoner? That was the state of things that Mrs. Jackson spoke to. Within a week of it Le Neve has a complete change of demeanour. She comes home happy and relieved, bringing Mrs. Crippen's jewels, furs, and clothes, going about with Mrs. Crippen's husband, and going to live at Mrs. Crippen's husband's house.

So the thing goes on. She went to Dieppe with Crippen, and came back and stayed at Hilldrop Crescent with him, and was there found on 8th July when the police came to inquire about the missing Mrs. Crippen. She knows what the object of their inquiry is. She goes with them to Albion House. An interview takes place between Crippen and Chief Inspector Dew, and then between her and Chief Inspector Dew. She knows that Chief Inspector Dew is inquiring after the missing woman. The very next morning she and Crippen are in flight, both disguised, both under false names. Flying from what? From the remains which are buried in that cellar; from the accusation against Crippen of the murder of his wife. Le Neve was arrested on 31st July. She was told of the charge made against her—the charge of murder, and the charge of being accessory after the fact. She made no

Appendix D.

reply. On 21st August on her way home she was told the charge, and made no reply. On 27th August, at Bow Street Police Station she was told of the charge, and made no reply; and when committed for trial, with every opportunity for making a statement she made none.

Gentlemen, it is left to you to apply your common sense to the facts, and see whether any other reason than knowledge on her part that Crippen had murdered his wife can account for her silence. I do not think I should be justified in taking up your time further. It is for you to say, on these facts what inference, either for or against the prisoner, you will draw from them.

Speech for the Defence.

Mr. F. E. Smith, addressing the jury on behalf of the prisoner, said—I have not had an opportunity of addressing you till now, and it will be necessary for me to lay before you the circumstances on which I shall rely at some greater length than was necessary for my learned friend in addressing you for the second time. I think it very essential that you should clearly understand what is the nature of the charge here, and what is the proposition—I shall venture to say before I finish the astounding proposition—to which the prosecution in this case stands committed. It is, to put it shortly, that in this murder committed by Crippen—a murder callous, calculated, cold-blooded, a murder which, I say, in the whole annals of crime it would be hard to match for cold blooded deliberation—the prisoner in the dock was privy to that murder, that she became privy to it after its commission with or without all its details. That, and that alone, is the issue which you have to determine.

Did the prisoner, either before she went away with Crippen or at the time she went away with him, become aware that Crippen committed this murder? Let me repeat here a caution that is very familiar to those of us who practise in these Courts, and very necessary to be borne in mind. It is not sufficient for the prosecution to come here and say, "We are an agency for eliciting explanations. We come here to invite explanations. We complain that explanations have not been forthcoming." It is for the prosecution to convince you beyond all reasonable doubt of the truth of the fundamental proposition to which they are committed, and that proposition is that this woman became aware that Crippen had killed his wife. It is for my learned friend not to invite explanations from me, not to indicate as a matter of interest that there is a point obscure here, or a detail in regard to which I can assist him by offering an explanation. It is for him to discharge the onus, and to discharge it fully. The law places it on him, and says, "You shall prove that this woman knew that Crippen murdered his wife." It is for you, with the very scanty assistance which my learned friend has been able to give you, to ask yourselves the question, "How far have the prosecution proved their case?" And in a case in which knowledge of murder is concerned one does not, I apprehend, expect a lower standard in the character of the proof than in a less important case. Remembering the tremendous character of the charge here, remembering the onus which the prosecution are bound to discharge, I ask you this question: "Taking the case as a whole, how far has my learned friend, in the course of his two speeches, in the course of the evidence which in any way affects this prisoner, discharged the onus?" It is a question which c ot be answered in a perfunctory manner.

I suppose no observation in ethics is more familiar than that no one suddenly becomes very base. Bearing this in mind, I invite you to consider what is the evidence, so far as it goes, about this young woman's antecedents, in order that you may have some guidance when you consider how far you can conceivably accept the suggestion which the prosecution, on grounds so slender, asks you to accept. What has been the history of this young woman before she came into the dock? We have indications here and there in the inquiries made by Inspector Dew, in the evidence given by Mr. Long, and in the statement by Mrs. Jackson as to the life which Le Neve had led for several years before the events which form the subject of this inquiry. We know, for instance, that ten or eleven years ago, at the age of sixteen or seventeen, an age when I need hardly remind you young girls in happier circumstances are going to a finishing governess, it became necessary for her to earn her own living as a typist.

You know what are the temptations to which, under normal conditions and with normal employers, a young and attractive girl is exposed going to the city as a typist. You know that the road of life is steep and dangerous enough for her under normal circumstances. What was the misfortune of this girl, little more than a child, when it became necessary for her to earn her living? She had the extreme misfortune to come across the path, at the age of seventeen, of one of the most dangerous and remarkable men who have lived in this century; a man to whom in the whole history of the psychology of crime a high place must be given as a compelling and masterful personality. Carry your minds back ten years. Conceive to yourselves the two people who became acquainted. Crippen, imperturbable, unscrupulous, dominating, fearing neither God nor man, and yet a man insinuating, attractive, and immoral. That is one of the two people. The other was, as I have said, a schoolgirl aged seventeen, an age when most of you would be shielding your daughters in happy homes from the world. She was the girl who, Mrs. Jackson was able to tell you, years afterwards was a gentle, retiring, sympathetic girl.

What do you conceive the mutual relations of those two, in their origin, were? There is no reason whatever to suppose that the intrigue between them has lasted more than three years. There is no reason to suppose she was other than chaste during the first seven years of her struggle with the world. Then, in measuring the moral blame which you rightly assign to the intrigues which were undoubtedly carried on in the last three years, you would, I suggest, be doing wrong if you excluded from your consideration the circumstances that Crippen was the one really important figure looming so largely in her life.

He was the doctor, and she was the typist. Their relative positions were very likely those of the centurion in the Bible who said to his servant, "Do this, and he doeth it." Those were the positions. For seven years she was under that influence. I ask you to think of the seven years, and how they were spent, and contrast them with the lives that you give to your daughters; seven years of drab and dreary toil by day as a typist; by night a gloomy lodging-house, and this in the very dawn of womanhood! When you are forming your judgment on the whole of the case, I ask you not to lay undue weight upon the circumstances of the intrigue. No one can doubt that Crippen soothed her conscience by telling her either that his wife, Mrs. Crippen, did not love him, or that she loved another man, and was threatening to go away with another man. It may be true or false, but it is not material. Whether true or false, representations of the kind must have been made by Crippen, and they might have been reasonably believed by her at this time.

I come to the time during which Miss Le Neve was staying with Mrs. Jackson. What was Mrs. Jackson's description of her? That she had an attractive disposition, no wickedness, no dissolute habits, no levity or wantonness of conduct, so far as she saw, with the exception, of course, of the attraction which Dr. Crippen had for her. At the same time we know that she was neuralgic, delicate, and a little hysterical. Under such circumstances, I want to ask, "Is it the prosecution's case that Le Neve became aware immediately after the murder that the murder had been committed?" Am I asking too much when I say that the prosecution should at least understand their own theory, and at least tell you clearly, and not in the alternative, what their theory is? I cannot for the life of me, having heard Mr. Muir's two speeches, tell you whether the Crown's case is that Le Neve became aware of the murder at or near the time it was committed, or whether it is that she became aware of it immediately before she fled. There is not the slightest doubt that in his opening speech the case that Mr. Muir intended to make was that this woman became aware the murder had been committed at or near the time it was committed, and that it was because of her agitation on receiving that horrible news that Mrs. Jackson was able to found the observations which it was supposed she was going to make in the witness box.

When I contemplate the position as it has been left now that Mrs. Jackson has given evidence with the position when Mr. Muir opened the case, and the manner in which he has perfunctorily abandoned it, I am shocked that a charge of that character should be brought forward and proceeded with. You have had the advantage of seeing Mrs. Jackson in the witness-box. She has told you that almost daily during January she noticed the same signs of depression and physical ailment. What is the suggestion my learned friend makes now as to the cause

Appendix D.

of the depression? Why did not my learned friend, at any rate, give us some little guidance on this point. During the whole of January, a month before anything happened to Belle Elmore, and during which, according to all the evidence, husband and wife were living on apparently friendly terms, those same symptoms in Le Neve had been diagnosed by the kind-hearted, officious, and somewhat garrulous landlady, who for the whole month had been asking questions as to what ailed Le Neve.

Mr. Muir has said it would be wrong to claim for Mrs. Jackson exact precision in the matter of dates. That observation bears very much more on the case for the prosecution than on the case for the defence. Mrs. Jackson said, not only here but before the coroner, that it was in February that the prisoner came home looking happier than she had for some time, and announced that "somebody had gone to America." Mrs. Jackson, after going through that scene with Le Neve, probably thought nothing more about it until July. She was then interviewed by the police. By that time she had read all the details of the Crippen case in the papers. It is obvious that at that time she knew what was the critical part of this case. She was thoroughly steeped in all the melodrama and the horror of it. She was asked this question, "Did you notice anything strange about Le Neve's manner?" I derived the impression of Mrs. Jackon, that she is a lady who would never be defeated by a question of that kind, and thereupon, in answer to the leading question, she described the scene which there is every reason now to believe took place before the murder. She described it in language by no means inconsistent with the view, that the illness of Miss Le Neve was largely physical, exaggerated no doubt by depression. Unless the prosecution withdrew Mrs. Jackson's evidence altogether, it means that at or about this time Le Neve knew that Crippen had murdered his wife. I would ask, is there any one of you who is absolutely certain whether the case for the prosecution is that Le Neve knew at that time, and if so, by what evidence is it supported? Is there one other witness except Mrs. Jackson, or one other shred of evidence, to satisfy you that Le Neve became aware of the murder at or near the time of its commission?

How could Le Neve have known about the murder? In two ways only. The first would be that she found it out, and the second that Crippen told her. No one will suggest that it is likely that she found out. There is not a vestige of evidence that she could have done so. That being the case, the prosecution is necessarily committed to the view that Crippen told the young woman that he had killed his wife.

If that is so he must have told her either in broad outline or with a wealth of hideous and filthy detail which has occupied this Court for a week. A more monstrous and stupid suggestion was never made in a Court of justice. What is the position? Crippen had risked his neck; he coolly weighed every chance; he did his terrible work on 1st February with no accomplice, no witness, and, as he fondly thought, leaving behind him no trace. It is now suggested that the man who had done all this—who with fiendish and detailed calculation had covered up every trace which might reveal and betray his hideous secret—told this young, nervous woman that he had committed the murder. In other words, he gave this enormous hostage to fortune—he told a woman that he had killed his wife. If the teachings of human psychology have any value, the odds are prodigious that any young woman not belonging to the criminal classes, having this horrible statement made to her, would receive it with aversion, revulsion, and disgust. Does any one suggest that this would not be a possibility which Crippen would bear in mind; that he would realise that a woman, innocent up to now, was to be asked by him to become an accomplice to a crime so horrible that to-day it is spoken of in the whole world almost with bated breath?

My learned friend's case is really this—that Crippen would say to Le Neve, "This is how I treated the woman who last shared my home, and I invite you to come and share it with me now." He ran such risks as men do not run even on the wild assumption that when Le Neve was told of the crime she acquiesced and agreed to remain silent—a wild and incredible proposition. But even supposing that Crippen put his neck at the hazard of a woman's constancy and self-control, safe, as he thought, by the precautions he had taken, he put his life in the hands of a nervous and hysterical woman. He knew her temperament, and yet we are asked to believe that he put his life on the chance that in a fit of

emotion, in her sleep, in fright, to a friend, or aghast at the sheer horror of it, she might have told something of the dark and terrible secret which Crippen kept to himself and to himself alone.

From first to last not a single inaccuracy of the slightest importance has been found in her statement. She said that Crippen had told her early in February that his wife had gone to America, and it is asked whether it is to be supposed that in that event she would have left behind all her clothes. It is said it is impossible that she believed Mrs. Crippen had gone to America, and yet Inspector Dew, an experienced police officer, a man of the world, a man with a wide knowledge of the seamy side of life and of human nature, was so able to believe it that he circulated a description of Belle Elmore. If there can be one circumstance which suggests innocence more than another, it was the way in which prisoner dealt with the clothes and jewellery. It is incredible that if she had known of the murder she could have gone about distributing the clothes as she did. If she believed that Mrs. Crippen had gone away with another man, she knew perfectly well that Mrs. Crippen would not dare to come back. Is the suggestion that she wore the brooch at the Benevolent Fund ball consistent with the suggestion that she knew a murder had been committed? If she had known, would she have gone to the ball, where many of Mrs. Crippen's friends were, appeared with Crippen, and worn the very brooch that belonged to the dead woman?

Now I come to the last point made by the prosecution, the point insisted upon by Mr. Muir, that Le Neve fled in disguise with Crippen. What do you suppose Crippen said to her before she went away? You may well ask yourselves that. Not only have the prosecution not shown that she was told before she went away, but I have shown you that she was not told before. The prosecution say that if she was not told before she must have become aware of it when she fled in disguise. Before you can draw that conclusion you must satisfy yourself that there was nothing else which Crippen could have said to her to induce her to flee in disguise. I reject in toto that there is nothing else which Crippen could have told her consistent with her innocence in the matter which would have been of sufficient weight and urgency to induce her to go away with him. Consider the influence, the dominating influence, which a character like Crippen's would exercise over her.

Suppose Crippen had said something like this to her: "Inspector Dew, as you know, has asked me some nasty questions about my wife. She had gone away, and I do not know where she is, and if she does not turn up it may be very awkward for me, and I may be liable to arrest." Supposing, for the sake of argument, that Crippen had said that. Would not that be a circumstance in which one can well understand an inexperienced girl would have gone away. You cannot consider this as being a case of two adults of equal age dealing with one another. They were very different persons. Crippen had acquired this enormous power over her, and she was utterly ignorant of the laws of England. She was confronted with the problem as to whether she would stay in England or go with him.

Already I have ventured to suggest to you that Crippen had not told her before, and now I ask you, if I am right in saying that Crippen had never told her before, would he tell her now if he could possibly help it Must not the answer here be precisely the answer which I think I have shown you must be the answer to the first question. Would it have made him safer, even if she had been willing to become his accomplice I say to you that the prosecution have not even explained what is their theory on this, which is the very fundamental point of their case.

If she was aware of this matter, when do they suggest that she became aware of it On what evidence do they satisfy themselves that she was aware of it? Consider whether or not they have satisfied you. They will have to give you one good reason why Crippen should have told Le Neve, and I ask you, and I am content that my case should be judged by your ability to give an answer to this question, why should Crippen tell Le Neve? If she found out, then I quite agree. But there is not a vestige of proof that she found out. If she had not found out, then why in the name of conscience, in the name of security, should Crippen have told her? The suggestion is so grotesque that you cannot for a moment believe it.

Does any one believe that the girl went back to live at Hilldrop Crescent

towards the end of February, the month that this murder was committed—went to live in this house knowing that its last tenant had been murdered by the man she was going to live with? Such is the suggestion put to you. Was woman ever known so wicked and so abandoned? I say, in all history there have been very few women capable of such wickedness. Every vestige of evidence that you have in this case as to the character of Le Neve shows that if there had been such women in history she is not one of them. You have heard her described as a gentle, sympathetic girl. A defenceless child, she maintained herself at the age of seventeen in the struggle for life without any indication of moral obliquity, and you are asked to say that she went back to live in this house in the immediate contiguity of these gruesome remains.

Another point of evidence is the statement made by Crippen to Inspector Dew. What does Crippen say—"Miss Le Neve knows nothing at all about it; I never told her anything." So far as that statement made by Crippen supported any inference in his own case it was against him. It is one of those points against Crippen which the prosecuting counsel would rely upon. He knows well enough he is charged with murder, and yet what does he say to the police officer? "I never told Le Neve anything about it." Therefore, it is against himself, as it assents partly to the view that there was some charge which could properly be brought against him but of which Le Neve did not know. I would not accept Crippen's word very much unless there were other reasons supporting it. I say there are other reasons in this case. Crippen, though incriminating himself, helped Le Neve.

There is another point. On the "Montrose" a statement was made by Le Neve to the captain in the presence of Inspector Dew. The captain said, "Did you not see your father's letter in the newspaper?" Le Neve says, "I have not seen any newspapers since I left London." My learned friend says she could have seen English papers in Antwerp. Of course, you can see English papers in Antwerp if you know where to get them. It is clear that if she did not see the English papers she did not know about it, because she cannot read a foreign language. And don't you think Crippen took good care that she did not see any English papers?"

I will ask you to picture to yourselves what her life has been for the last six months or more. Imagine what her life has been—hunted, harassed, arrested, and charged with the crime of murder, brought face to face with the full details of the charge formulated against Crippen. From that day to this her life has been one long horror, culminating in this trial and in the knowledge that the man she loved and trusted committed one of the most odious and bloody murders in the history of crime. Imagine what she has gone through.

The prosecution say they want an explanation. That is a wholly novel conception in our criminal law. It is for the prosecution to prove the fact, and I am not prepared in a case like this—and I have the full responsibility for the decision, which is my own—I am not prepared, I say, after what that woman has gone through, in the state of health in which she is, to submit her, on facts like these and on evidence such as that which has been presented, to the deadly cross-examination of my learned friend. It would be different in a case in which the prosecution had brought forward massive and weighty evidence, but I have to deal here with this case and with this prosecution, and I say that they have not proved their case. We are asked to infer that Crippen must have told her about the murder. Never in the history of our law has a prosecution asked a jury to draw an inference so crazy and so cruel on such facts.

Knowing that she is a young and inexperienced woman, without any knowledge of the world, that she is dazed and shattered, I have taken the responsibility upon myself, and I am content to support it. When she leaves this dock acquitted by your verdict the prospect which opens out to her is not one of happiness. She will be known all over London, and all over England, as one who has been the mistress of this murderer. When she leaves the dock, in any event, there must be a most unhappy future for her. Let her at least have the satisfaction of knowing that she leaves it with the assent of twelve jurymen who have heard this case, and who, though not blind to her faults, acquitted her. I do not ask you for mercy. I only ask you for justice, and I am content you will judge her in her hour of agony with that consideration that you would wish shown to a daughter of your own if she were placed in the same position.

Hawley Harvey Crippen.

Summing Up.

The Lord Chief Justice, in summing up, said—Gentlemen of the jury, I must ask you to listen to me for a few moments in this case. It is a case which you must approach with very great care. We have just listened to a very able speech from Mr. Smith, and some of his arguments you must consider carefully. Let me caution you not to act on anything except evidence. If there was ever a case in which it was necessary to [illegible]l your minds against prejudice it is this case. You must fix your consideration upon what is found to be proved, on what will leave no reasonable doubt in your own minds. If there is any doubt in your minds, the prisoner is entitled to the benefit. The Crown have to make out their case, and unless in your judgment they have made it out beyond all reasonable doub., and to your satisfaction so that you would adopt it and act upon it, in an event in your own lives, then the prisoner, Ethel Le Neve, is entitled to have your verdict of not guilty.

The only matter upon which you have to concentrate your attention is, "Did Ethel Le Neve know when she fled with Crippen that Crippen was a murderer and had murdered his wife?" You are not to judge Ethel Le Neve because she was his mistress. This is not a Court of morals; this is a Court of law.

You are not to judge the woman because she has fallen. It would not be right for any one to judge the woman from the standard of morality. You must consider the case just as if she had not had that history to which reference has been made. In so far as immorality and misconduct have bearing on the evidence you must consider them, but you are not to allow any prejudice to enter into your minds because this poor woman was seduced, and was the mistress of this man. Further, you are not to assume anything against this woman because of the wickedness of which Crippen has been guilty. You must sweep from your mind anything in the nature of prejudice arising from the fact that she was an immoral woman, and that she was associated with Crippen.

I told you I would state to you the one question on which she is charged, and I repeat it. "Did she know, when she assisted Crippen in his flight, that he had murdered his wife?" Now, you need not trouble your minds as to whether she assisted in the flight. That is not seriously disputed. She joined in, so far as she disguised herself, so that she might pass as a boy instead of as a woman, and as Crippen's son. Therefore, if you think she knew of it, you will probably have no doubt that she did in fact harbour and assist Crippen. Of course, no one is allowed to assist the flight of a person who has committed a crime. That a murder was committed on or about 2nd February is beyond doubt. Therefore, I say, concentrate your minds and apply your consideration to the question. Did she know about it? Again, I say the Crown must satisfy you by evidence, and not by suspicion, that she knew of it. It is quite true, as Mr. Smith put it to you, they have no right to call for an explanation unless there is evidence which leads you to the conclusion that she knew Crippen to have committed the murder.

Now, the affirmative evidence requires to be very carefully examined, and examined from a slightly different point of view than was suggested either by Mr. Muir or Mr. Smith. It centres mainly upon what has been described as the Jackson incident. It is said that on or about the end of January or the beginning of February, the prisoner was in such a state that, as Mr. Muir put it, she must have been under the influence of some horror. Her eyes were staring, and her condition such that she could not speak or explain herself. Mr. Muir very properly called your attention to that, and if he could have proved that at the time she could have known of the murder it would have been a strong piece of evidence. You must consider carefully what Mr. Smith addressed to you upon the point, when he said that the evidence was not established. I think in his remarks he could have gone a little further.

There are certain facts which are established. The murder took place between one or two o'clock on 1st February and twelve o'clock on the morning of the 2nd. That we know. You remember Mrs. Martinetti stated that she left about 1.30 in the morning, and that was the last time she saw Mrs. Crippen alive. On the 2nd Le Neve told Miss May that Mrs. Crippen had gone to America. The 2nd of February is the first date when Le Neve could have first known of the murder, and when, according to herself, she first knew that Belle Elmore, who

Appendix D.

was undoubtedly her rival, had gone away. In the light of that it is very important to consider Mrs. Jackson's evidence. Mrs. Jackson says in her cross-examination by Mr. Smith that early in February Le Neve said that some one had gone to America. She could not have stated that till 2nd February. It is to be said in favour of the prisoner that Mrs. Jackson said that very early in February Miss Le Neve was in the highest spirits, "higher than I have ever seen her before. I think some one must have left her some money." Mrs. Jackson went on to say, "I know whom she meant when she said that some one had gone to America, because she had told me that Mrs. Crippen had threatened to go away."

You must consider the agitation spoken of my Mrs. Jackson. You must remember that Mrs. Jackson said that about a week after she was so ill she was in the best of spirits. She had a long conversation with Mrs. Jackson when she was ill. She would not tell her what it was, but if it was a week before 2nd February it could not have anything to do with the murder, because on 26th January Belle Elmore was alive and attending the committees of the Music Hall Guild. On 31st January she was alive, and it is not suggested by anybody that she is dead or disappeared till the morning of 2nd February. A week before she was in good spirits she has a conversation with Mrs. Jackson, who asks her to tell her what is the matter, and she says she cannot. She goes to bed, and the next morning she has a further conversation, and finally said, "Would you be surprised if it were the doctor?" Then this woman, who is a sensible woman, says, "Was it he who got you into trouble before?" Le Neve says it was. "Do not mind about that; it is long past," Mrs. Jackson said. Le Neve said, "I cannot bear to see them together. When I see them I feel my position." It may be that this girl had deep twinges of conscience, and felt her position as being the mistress of a married man. Then comes the statement that Le Neve had told her that Belle Elmore had threatened to go to America with some other man, and that if she did the doctor would divorce his wife and marry her. And then this kind-hearted woman says, "Surely you won't. Are you not giving up too much for him?"

If there is nothing but her agitation on a date before 2nd February, then there is an end of the case, and I am bound to tell you that you are not to convict the prisoner on suspicion. You are to take into consideration the evidence relating to events after the time of the murder. The evidence is supported by the other fact that Mr. Smith elicited. Mrs. Jackson says that in the latter part of January Le Neve was in a bad state of health, but she would not say anything about the actual date. If her stor is true, that on 2nd February Ethel Le Neve came to her and told her "She h gone to America," it must have been because Le Neve had been told the same ory. This scoundrel was telling the story to everybody else, therefore you are entitled to ask yourselves the question, "If he was telling other people that story, what reason have you to doubt that he would tell her the same story? Why should he tell her a different story?" There was no motive for telling her a different story.

I have to see that you act on the evidence, and if you come to the conclusion on the evidence before you that her agitation did not occur after 2nd February, on that evidence you are satisfied that it occurred a week before she came back in good spirits, there is no other evidence that in that time she was in a state of agitation or ill-health. The Crown are bound by their evidence, and the evidence of Mrs. Jackson is that it was before 2nd February.

You want to consider very carefully what is the probability of this scoundrel having told her. So far as the evidence is concerned, it stands in this way. When he was arrested he said, "It is only fair to say she knows nothing about it. I never told her anything." It is perfectly plain that that was a most serious statement so far as he was concerned. There is no secret about it. Crippen was most seriously cross-examined upon it, and he was asked to what .e could refer except his wicked deed towards his wife.

I put it to you that it was a statement strongly against himself, although I agree that with such a man as Crippen you won't care very much what he says, still you must look at it in so far as it relates to this girl. He is saying something to shield her, and says it in terms which reflect on himself. He says, "I did not tell her anything about it." That he had told her that his wife had gone to America and had died you need have no doubt, because of the advertisement which he put in the *Era*. I am bound to say that you must ask yourselves if you

believe that he would have told the woman he wanted to have as his wife if he had never told anybody else. Of course, he did not tell anybody else. If the story was "My wife has gone to America and subsequently died," there is the explanation for Le Neve's conduct which in our wicked world was a ready and reasonable one, although it may not be one of which you think highly.

Mr. Muir has asked you if it is not proved that the prisoner knew of Mrs. Crippen's death, as she wore the dead woman's jewellery. You have heard Mr. Smith upon that point, and I think you must consider very carefully what he has said. Do you think that the fact that she wore the jewels and clothes was consistent with the fact that she believed that Crippen had cruelly murdered his wife a few hours before? As you are asked to draw an inference I must tell you that you should only draw an inference that is hostile to the prisoner if you are forced to it by an act. Now, gentlemen, it is pointed out that she gave a considerable amount of things to Mrs. Jackson. I can only say you must be very careful how you act on your suspicions, as she appears to have been very much under the control of Dr. Crippen, and you must draw no inference unless you believe that she was in some way concealing guilt.

You are asked to judge of her conduct, and I want here to make some observations in reference to what Mr. Smith said. You know it is no good concealing from you, as you know perfectly well, that a prisoner can give evidence, and possibly you may have wished—I should not be at all surprised—that she had gone into the box and said whether or not she knew about the crime. I think it is just to her to say there is no obligation on a person to go into the witness-box unless there is affirmative evidence against them, and you must not draw a hostile conclusion unless you are satisfied that there is an affirmative case to answer. That is to say that if you think the incident to which Mrs. Jackson's referred to took place before the murder, then there is no reason for her to go into the box.

As to her disguising as a boy, you must draw your own conclusions, but you must be a little careful that you do not think you know too much of what that scoundrel may have told her. As Mr. Smith has told you, Crippen may have said that he was afraid of being arrested. She undoubtedly was very much attached to him, and undoubtedly thought she was going to be his wife, or at any rate his mistress. That is one part of the case only, and you may think that some further explanation is required. All I can say is that you must be satisfied before you draw any inference.

I must say that another point made by Mr. Smith must not be rejected in the summary way suggested by Mr. Muir. Le Neve said on the boat that she had not seen the papers since she left London. Mr. Muir went a little too far when he said she must have seen the papers in Belgium. You do not know where she was when she was in Antwerp. You do not know how far Crippen would keep her under his hand and prevent her seeing the papers. There is no evidence that she did see the papers. It is said she must have seen the English papers at the hotel. Well, the Crown know at which hotel they stayed, and they could have called evidence to show if there are English papers taken at that hotel. If you come to the conclusion that she did not know that Mrs. Crippen was murdered when she evinced that agitation referred to by Mrs. Jackson, then you must wipe that from the slate altogether. Then you must ask the question, when could Crippen have told her, and why should Crippen have told her at all, until the actual moment of flight? Why should he have told her a story different from what he told everybody else between 2nd February and 8th July, when Inspector Dew came to see him?

The fact of this woman living with him and going with him to Dieppe, wicked and immoral as it is, is not evidence that he told her he committed the murder.

Upon that part of the case you are entitled to take into consideration what Mr. Smith has said to you about her being gentle, sympathetic, and loving and affectionate towards Crippen. If he had told her, not only might it have been dangerous to himself, but do you not think that it might have changed her feelings towards him?

Gentlemen, I have called your attention to the parts of the evidence which can be said to be evidence against the prisoner. I caution you that you are not to judge her upon a standard of morality. You must be satisfied that the Crown have made out their case and that Crippen told her he had murdered his wife, and until you are satisfied of that, she is entitled to your verdict. You must not

allow your minds to be influenced by what you have heard outside, or by the feeling that the prisoner was an immoral woman, and that she had lived as she ought not to have lived. She is charged with having assisted her paramour, and unless the evidence is there to satisfy you, you must find a verdict for her, but if you are satisfied you will do your duty.

At twelve minutes past four the jury returned to the Court and resumed their places in their box. When Lord Alverstone had taken his seat on the bench, the Clerk of Arraigns made the formal inquiry as to whether the jury had agreed upon the verdict and what the verdict was.

The foreman replied that the jury were agreed upon a verdict of "Not Guilty."

Accordingly the prisoner was immediately liberated.

APPENDIX E.

Court of Criminal Appeal.

(Before Mr. Justice Darling, Mr. Justice Channell, and Mr. Justice Pickford.)

Saturday, 5th November, 1910.

Rex v. *Hawley Harvey Crippen.*

This was the appeal of Hawley Harvey Crippen, on grounds of fact and of law, against his conviction at the Central Criminal Court on 22nd October, 1910, before the Lord Chief Justice, for the murder of his wife, Belle Elmore.

Mr. Tobin, K.C.; Mr. Huntly Jenkins, and Mr. H. D. Roome appeared for the appellant; and Mr. R. D. Muir, Mr. Travers Humphreys, and Mr. S. Ingleby Oddie for the Crown.

A preliminary point with regard to the juror who was taken ill during the trial was taken. The appeal on this point was dismissed.

THE JUDGMENT.

Mr. Justice Darling, in delivering the judgment of the Court, said that since they had decided the first point Mr. Tobin had taken further points in favour of his client.

The first was that the Court ought to quash this conviction because the Lord Chief Justice had allowed the prosecution at the close of the case for the defence to call what was called rebutting evidence. The rule was that a judge, in considering whether he should allow rebutting evidence to be called, should consider whether that evidence could have been given, or ought to have been adduced by the prosecution as a part of their case and before they closed it. They did not feel inclined to lay down the rule in the words of Chief Justice Rindal, in the case of *Rex* v. *Frost*, vol. 4, State Trials, new series, at column 386 (*ubi sup*). He had said—"There is no doubt that the general rule is that, where the Crown begins its case like a plaintiff in a civil suit, they cannot afterwards support their case by calling fresh witnesses, because they are met by certain evidence that contradicts it. They stand or fall by the evidence they have given. They must close their case before the defence begins; but if any matter arises *ex improviso* which no human ingenuity can foresee on the part of a defendant in a civil suit or a prisoner in a criminal case, there seems to me no reason why that matter which arose *ex improviso* may not be answered by contrary evidence on the part

of the Crown. They would not put the rule in those words. In the first place the rebutting evidence must be evidence admissible in the case. Supposing it to be admissible evidence, it then became a question for the judge at the trial to determine in his discretion whether the evidence, not having been tendered in chief, ought to be given as rebutting the case set up by the defence.

In coming to that decision he should have regard to what had been laid down in the cases cited by Mr. Tobin. But the matter was one within the discretion of the judge who presided at the trial, who was in a much better position than any appeal Court to determine whether it was really fair to allow it to be given, and whether it did or did not expose the defence to a disadvantage to which they ought not to be exposed. It did not appear to have been laid down in any case that, if a judge exercised his discretion in a way different to that which a Court of Appeal would have exercised it, that fact alone was sufficient ground for quashing a conviction. The only case where anything of the kind was suggested was that of *Wright* v. *Willcox*, 1850, 9 C.B., 650, where the Lord Chief Justice had said—"The time at which evidence is to be received must be in the discretion of the judge, the exercise of that discretion being subject to the review of the Court." There was nothing in the judgment of the other judges in the case to the same effect—in the judgments of Mr. Justice Maule, Mr. Justice Creswell, and Mr. Justice Talfourd. There was nothing in those judgments as to whether the judge's discretion was subject to the review of the Court. Mr. Justice Maule said—"The objection to the reception of the evidence was that it was offered too late. It would be very inconvenient to hold this to be a sufficient ground for setting aside a verdict. Cases in which the discretion of the judge must be exercised frequently occur. When a party has closed his case he often asks and is allowed to supply a deficiency." No doubt the question was one for the discretion of the judge at the trial, who was necessarily in a far better position to exercise it than the Court of Criminal Appeal could possibly be.

All they could say was this: The evidence admitted in rebuttal was admissible evidence, and the Lord Chief Justice had seen no reason why, in fairness to the defence, it should not have been given. He had exercised his discretion, and, even if they had the power to do so, they saw no reason why they should interfere with it. But they wished to add a few words to what had been said. If it were shown that the prosecution had done something unfair—had set what had been called a trap—which resulted in an injustice to the prisoner, the Court reserved to itself full power to deal with the matter. It was only necessary to say that in such a case the Court would probably come to the conclusion that there had been a miscarriage of justice, and exercise the powers given to them by section 4 of the Criminal Appeal Act, 1907. But there was no reason to suppose that anything of that kind had taken place here. On this second ground advanced by Mr. Tobin they saw no reason to interfere with the conviction.

With regard to the next ground, that there was no proper evidence before the jury to establish the fact that the remains found at Hilldrop Crescent were those of a woman, and that in any case there was no sufficient evidence to prove they were the remains of Cora Crippen—with regard to this ground Mr. Tobin in the course of his argument went into the evidence given by the doctors on both sides as well as into the evidence as to what was found buried with the remains—the clothing and other articles. They thought that there was evidence before the jury, and a great deal of evidence, which would satisfy the verdict at which they arrived and to establish the fact that these remains were those of Cora Crippen. With regard to the evidence of the doctors concerning the piece of flesh and skin, they were not surprised that the jury preferred the evidence given by the medical men called for the Crown. For the doctors called for the defence when cross-examined had been obliged to abandon an opinion they had expressed with confidence and had expressed in writing. They did not wish to say anything more by way of criticism than that. They were not surprised that the jury had preferred the evidence given by the doctors called for the prosecution.

It remained for them to deal with the criticism that was directed to the summing up. Mr. Tobin had said in the course of the argument that every point that had been made on behalf of the prisoner was put to the jury and put fully and fairly. But he had criticised a phrase used there in the course of a long summing up. Sitting in that Court they had often said in similar cases that they would not interfere where attention had been called to phrases ambiguously used, or not

Appendix E.

expressed quite so fully and clearly, or not expressed with the exactitude which, as counsel would point out, might have been used. They must look and see whether, taking the summing up as a whole, the judge had put the issue fairly to the jury; whether all the evidence was before them, and whether the judge adequately directed the attention of the jury to where lay the burden of proof. They thought it was plain that in this case the Lord Chief Justice had not left the jury with any false impression as to the burden of proof. Mr. Tobin had argued that that was not so, but he would read one passage from the summing up to show how clearly the matter had been put to the jury. The Lord Chief Justice had said—"Now, gentlemen, I have left that part of the case as I have told you. I have dealt with it first because, if you believe the story of the defence, it is a conclusive answer to this charge, and you need not trouble about the other points . . . and if upon considering the whole of this case you come to the conclusion that you are not satisfied with Crippen's account, then you have to consider with me whether the Crown have established their case upon the two issues of Cora Crippen's remains being those found in the house, and of that woman having been poisoned by the act of the defendant. Of course, if that is true, it is a further contradiction of the story he has told you." In those words the law was clearly laid down. The burden of proof lay upon the Crown. If when the prisoner had given his account the jury believed it, the case for the Crown necessarily came to an end. But if they did not believe it, even then the jury were entitled to acquit him because it still remained with the Crown to prove that the prisoner killed his wife and that the remains found at Hilldrop Crescent were those of Cora Crippen. They thought that, notwithstanding the criticism that had been levelled at the summing up, it did put adequately, fully, and fairly the complete case for the prisoner, and that no injustice had been done by any term, phrase, or sentence used in the summing up.

They considered that there was ample evidence to support the verdict of the jury, and that, on all the points taken, the appeal failed.

Solicitors—For the appellant, Arthur Newton; for the Crown, the Director of Public Prosecutions.